

American Genealogy



Class D Z Z

Book P 6

Copyright N^o

COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT



Michael Piggott.

CAUTION



Americans, remember your Washington, and beware being lured by your millionaire title-chasers, discarded politicians and “Pan - Angle Empire” builders, into the trammels of an International Court of Justice, located at “The Hague,” under judges and officers directed by the Monarchs of Europe. In a few years it may become a Court of Despotism.

American Genealogy

by

Michael Piggott

CAPTAIN CO. F 66th ILL., INFT. 1861-5 MEMBER OF THE
MILITARY ORDER OF THE LOYAL LEGION, THE
SOCIETY OF THE ARMY OF TENNESSEE
AND AMERICAN IRISH HISTORI-
CAL SOCIETY.

Published by the Author

COPYRIGHT

QUINCY, ILLINOIS, JUNE, 1915

PRICE \$1.50.

126

File
JUN 10 1915

© Cl. A 401324

Dedication

Reverently dedicated to the Sacred Memory of my Mother, Mary Hoolahan Piggot, who died in Tipperary, Ireland, December, 1836, from whom I inherited the Celtic love of liberty, morality and truth which inspired the labor of tracing American Genealogy and to devote many years of my life in earnest efforts to guard the social and political life of America—the land of my father's adoption and of my own pride, from the blight of British despotism, greed and falsehood.

MICHAEL PIGGOTT.

Quincy, Illinois.

Preface.

TO establish the genealogy of the American people; to create in both native and foreign born citizens a pride of race and a love of country; to refute the degrading British contention that Americans are descendants of the Saxon serfs of England and derive their system of self-government from them; to review past, present and approaching dangers to the Republic and the motives of those who have and are causing them; and to nationalize the American language as a shield against all enemies, the author has traced the dominating branches of the Aryan family, from the cradle of their race in Central Asia, thru India, Africa and Europe, to their New Eden in America.

American Genealogy

The World's Proudest Title—American Citizen

Citizens, by birth or choice, of a common country, that country has a right to concentrate your affections. The name of American, which belongs to you in your national capacity, must always exalt the just pride of patriotism—Washington.

CHAPTER I.

THE ARYAN FAMILY.

The tenacity of the mind to hold as veritable facts the fables and traditions of prehistoric ages, makes it difficult for one to believe the recent discoveries of scientists who tell us, that in distant ages Siberia was a delightful Eden and that the North Sea was a part of the German Forest and the Irish Sea the Scythian Valley, that the British Islands were more than once submerged by the ocean and that the Celtic Stone Circles and Cromlechs, found in Ireland, Scotland and Wales, have stone foundations resting on a stratum of clay beneath which lie the roots of giant oaks which required ages to grow, and that since the foundation stones were laid, twelve feet of peat have grown over them, each foot representing the growth of 800 years, or 9,600 years for the twelve feet, without counting the age of the giant oak-roots beneath.

They also tell us that they have traced those Celtic remains from Mount Atlas to the ruins of Carthage in Africa, centering them at Karnak the metropolis of a by-gone nation. That they are found on the islands and shores of the Mediterranean, and from Gibraltar northward, covering Portugal and Western Spain, extending along the Atlantic Coast of France, and eastward thru its central provinces to the limits of Germany, but not into Germany or Italy. They are on the capes and headlands of Brittany and the Western Isles of Britain, stretching northward to Norway and the Baltic Islands, and along the Atlantic Coast from Africa to the Artic Circle, and, no doubt, if traced, they would be found on the sunken Continent of Atlantis, from the Pillars of Hercules to the Capes of Florida. Those Cromlech discoveries sustain the linguists who tell us that the test of language shows that the Celts were the first of the Aryan families to enter Europe and that they were constantly prest forward by the Teutonic tribes of the same race.

When Caesar conquered Gaul and invaded Britain, he found the Celts and Teutons worshipping God before the Alters of the Druids, whom he attempted to suppress because their teachings were highly patriotic and encouraged their people to defend their liberties.

The presence of Druidic alters in Norway and along the shores and islands of the Baltic, shows that the Scandinavian tribes of the Teutonic family, in pagan times, received religious instructions from the Druids, and accounts for an alleged friendly

visit to Norway, of Irish tribes returning from Greece and Africa after, among other things, aiding the Jews to escape from Egyptian bondage.

Notwithstanding the Genesis of Moses, those Celtic Cromlechs, tho mute, give strong evidence sustaining the belief that for at least ten thousand years, the moral and political influence of the Druids swayed the Celtic and Teutonic tribes, occupying the shores and islands of the Mediterranean Sea, and the islands and coasts of the Atlantic Ocean from Africa to the Arctic Circle, and continued their influence until the conquest of Gaul by Caesar and the coming of a new and better civilization under the teachings of Christ.

The Language and Creed of Civilization.

More than six thousand years before the coming of Christ, the Bactrian tribes of the Aryan Family, while still united in a delightful Eden near the cradle of their race in the valleys of the Oxus River, in Central Asia, obeying the divine mandates of an Invisible, Spiritual God, to be industrious, moral and truthful; develop a language and a religion which have since become the mother tongue, and the mother creed, of the civilized world, and form the basis of a civilization which has been spread thruout the world by five dominating branches of the family—the Hindus; the Medo-Persians; the Celts; the Teutons and the Slavs.

Both history and sculpture tell us that the members of the different branches of the Aryan Family, especially the Celts and the Teutons, in ethnic features were scarcely distinguishable from each other. That all were a high type of the human species;

all were of a tall and stately form and a handsome physiogomy. The men of all branches were noted for courage and gallantry in battle. The women were remarkable for their stature and beauty and were treated by the men with a fine spirit of chivalry.

The parent stock of this civilizing family was called Ayrans—tillers of the soil—a designation found in Manu, the Hindu sacred historian, who says: "As far as the eastern and the western oceans. between the mountains, lies the land which the wise have named Arya-Vesta, or inhabited by honorable men." We believe and history shows that this family of honorable men were, and their descendants still are, the real chosen people of God. That they have been from the beginning the agents of God's beneficent purposes in the worldly affairs of men.

The Aryans were an agricultural and a pastoral people; but not Nomads, as they had fixed habitations. Their houses had doors, windows and fire-places. Their cattle were fed in community pastures, each having in the center a cluster of stables. They had cows, oxen, horses, sheep, goats, hogs and domestic fowls. Their food was mainly the product of the dairy and the flesh of cattle. They boiled and roasted meats and used soup. . They used plows in cultivating barley and other cereals, and mills for grinding the grain. They could spin and weave and wore cloaks and mantles. They manufactured pottery. They used hatchets, hammers, augers and other tools. They used gold, silver, copper, iron and tin. They had bows and arrows, swords, lances and shields. They navigated

the Oxus River, the Jaxartes and connecting waters. They were acquainted with decimal notation and measured time by years of 360 days.

Their Creed.

The Aryans believed, what is still visible to us, that superhuman influences of good and evil spirits were constantly striving for mastery in the affairs of men and nations; that man was endowed with reason and placed on earth between two destinies—the World of Light and the World of Darkness, and given a free will to guide him. If he obeyed the laws of his Creator, he was protected from the spirits of darkness which surrounded him day and night to lure him to evil. They detested falsehood as the basest, the most contemptible and the most pernicious of vices; they were taught to regard marriage as a sacred contract, to shun polygamy and to welcome children as the light of a family. The name “boy” meant bestower of happiness; “girl,” she who comes rejoicing; “brother,” supporter; “sister,” friendly.

Their family life was pure and simple. In each home was an altar before which the husband and wife united in family devotion to their Creator, the Supreme, Spiritual God of their fathers; the Creator and Ruler of all things. They believed in the immortality of the soul, in the remission of sins by good deeds and in an eternal, spiritual life beyond the grave.

They believed that an Invisible, Spiritual World, the abode of an Infinite, Spiritual Being, existed as far above the sun as the sun itself was above

the earth, long before the visible worlds of matter were created. That in the beginning this Infinite, Spiritual Being created, in His own Spiritual World, two minor beings. The first, proving pure and true to his creator, became the King of Light. The second, being corrupt and false, became the King of Darkness.

One being given a spiritual region of pure light the other one of pitchy darkness became antagonistic in everything. To correct and curb the disturbing influences of the King of Darkness, the Supreme, Spiritual Being instructed the King of Light to create the visible worlds of matter; the earth, the sun, the moon, the stars, and the good creatures thereof.

At the beginning of his creations, the King of Light produced six Archangels, which with himself made seven good and luminous spirits, to guard and maintain his visible worlds. He also produced numerous guardian angels for good men.

While the King of Light was the supreme spirit he was not always able to defeat the evil purposes of the King of Darkness who saw from his dismal abode what was being created in the heavens, and created in his own world of darkness a terrible host of evil spirits as numerous and as powerful as the beings of light. To avoid the misery and woe of an open conflict, the King of Light offered peace to the King of Darkness who preferred war instead, but becoming terror stricken at the sight of the Holy Angels, he was conquered by the strong word of the King of Light and fell back into his abyss of darkness, where he lay fettered for a

period of three thousand years, during which, the King of Light finisht His creations upon the earth and produced the great Primitive Bull, containing the seeds of all living creatures.

Tho fettered in his gloomy abyss from coming on earth, the King of Darkness finisht his creations, making a corresponding evil for every good being created in the heavens. The first man and woman were pure, innocent and happy. They worshipt their creator, but were tempted with an offering of milk and fruit which they accepted from the King of Darkness. The erring pair immediately lost their happiness. After having two children they died at the age of one hundred years, and as a punishment for sinning must remain in hell until the general resurrection of the dead.

Thus, the human race became mortal by the sin of its first parents. Man stands between the worlds of Light and of Darkness, endowed with reason and a free will, but the spirits of darkness surround him day and night, to tempt and lure him to evil. The King of Light, thru Zoroaster his inspired teacher has given man a revelation of the Divine Will if he obey the revelation he shall be protected by his creator and be beyond the powers of the King of Darkness to injure or mislead him. The essence of the divine law is to think, to speak, and to act purely; to be truthful, virtuous, industrious and just.

The King of Light was the all-beautiful; the all-wise being who was at the head of all that was good and lovely; of all that was beautiful. He made the celestial bodies, the earth, water and trees; all good

creations and all good things. He was good, true, and pure; the Holy God; the holiest essence of truth; the best thing of all; the father of truth and the master of purity. He was supremely happy and possest every blessing, virtue, wisdom and immortality. From Him proceeded all good to mankind. He rewarded the good with everlasting happiness and punisht the wicked.

The King of Darkness was the dark and gloomy intelligence; author of all that was evil. He tried to corrupt and ruin the good things created by the King of Light and was the dispurser of moral and political evils. He blasted portion of the earth with barrenness and made it produce thorns, thistles and poisonous plants. He caused wars and tumults. He produced ferocious wild beasts and serpents. He continually incited the bad against the good, and by every method sought to give vice the victory over virtue. The King of Light could not always defeat nor baffle him.

Man was placed on earth to preserve the good creations of the King of Light, which could only be done by tilling the soil, eradicating the thorns and weeds sent by the King of Darkness and by reclaiming tracts which that demon had curst with barrenness. Thus the cultivation of the soil was made a religious duty to be discharged, not by a degraded few, but by all. From this duty the race derived the name "Aryan"—A Tiller of The Soil.

The Aryans believed that in time their Creator would send a prophet who would cause the conversion of all mankind; yea, even the King of Darkness and his evil spirits. Then would follow the general

resurrection of the dead, whose bones would be clothed with new flesh and friends and relatives would again recognize each other. Darkness and crime would be banisht and the earth, once more, become a delightful Eden.

Such was the primitive creed of this wonderful family. Every maxim is stamp't with a divinity that has made it the basis of all subsequent creeds, and the moral ethics of the world.

The Aryan tribes, in their primitive homes, maintained a partriarchal form of government, but the father or head of each family was subject to a council of seven elders, whose chief was king and from whose decision there was an appeal only to Heaven, in the ordeal of fire and water. Their notions of right and wrong were well defined by law and custom. They did not believe in the brutal, modern, destroying principles, that might makes right, in dealings between men and nations.

The best of the world's work has been done by men and women of the Celtic, Teutonic and Slavic families. Thru them the Aryan spirit of veneration, morality and liberty has come to us, thru all the ages in the countless ebbs and flows of humanity, and in the rise and fall of creeds and nations, as our best ethical guide in our duty to our God; to our family, our country and our fellow man, and it will continue with us and our descendants to influence for good until the abode of man on earth shall be no more.

THE ARYAN DISPERSION.

Several thousand years before the days of Abraham a sudden convulsion of the earth changed

the climate of Central Asia causing a bitter cold where there was previously existing a semi-tropical heat. That such a change actually took place and that it was as sudden as it was severe was shown in the Nineteenth century by the discovery as far north as Siberia of vast deposits of frozen elephants, hippopotami and rhinoceri, whose flesh was still sufficiently preserved to serve as food for wild animals. The presence of those frozen remains plainly say that in the remote past Siberia enjoyed a climate sufficiently mild to produce suitable food for such animals and a climatic home harmonizing with their natures. The vast coal fields of Siberia, and of Alaska also proclaim the same facts.

The Iranic nations believed that this terrible change resulted from a divine arrangement allowing a destroying serpent to enter their delightful Eden and produce cold that changed their pleasant climate to a winter of ten months in order to disperse the family and prevent their Eden from being overcrowded with the human race. Thus believing the strongest tribes of the family commenced those wonderful streams of migration which have since covered the continents and the islands of the globe with their civilizing descendants. After many thousands of years of wandering amid the depotisms and immoralities of Europe, Asia, India and Africa, in quest of a new Eden, the descendants of three of those migrating streams have united in America in a more perfect Eden than that from which the cold blasts of a destroying serpent scattered their Aryan fathers.

We shall briefly trace the course of those scat-

tered branches from their separation in Asia to the reunion of their descendants in America, as citizens once more of a common country. The dispersion caused the Aryan tribes to divide into great branches as they moved away from the cradle of their race.

1. The tribes that crost the Indus and became the progenitors of the Brahmanic Hindus.

2. Those who crost the Hindu-Kosh and founded the Medo-Persian Empires.

3. The Pelasgic Celts who moved to the peninsula of Southern Europe and founded the Greek and Roman Republics; and their Gallic Kindreds who past to Western Europe and became the progenitors of the Lusitanians of ancient Portugal; the Iberians and Numatians of ancient Spain; the ancient Gauls and Belgae and their Latinized descendants; the modern Portuguese, Spaniards, French and Belgians, as well as the Irish, Scotch and Welsh; also the Britons and Cornish of England, and the Britons of France.

4. The Teutons who settled in Central Europe and became the progenitors of the conquering Goths and Vandals, the ancestors of the modern Germans, Danes, Swedes and Norwegians; the French and English-Normans and the Holland-Dutch.

5. The Slavs who overspread Northeastern Europe and became the progenitors of the Russians, Poles, Bohemians, Servians, Bulgarians, Bosnians and Croatians.

While following the historical narratives of the Aryan migrations, from their primitive home in Asia to the reunion of their descendants in America,

we found everywhere works plainly marking improvement in a humanizing civilization. Tho frequently baffled and set back by priest-craft and despotic rulers, the mass of the race remained faithful to the religious and political principles of their fathers. They develope and maintained for nearly three thousand years in Greece and in Rome the democracies, the sciences, the arts and the literatures which still remain, tho in fragments, the master-models of the world. Their Grecian Democracy gave America a base for its Republican System of representative government of the people, by the people, for the people; which secures to the humblest citizen life, liberty and property under equal and just laws made and changed from time to time by a majority mandate. Each recurrent year shows that it is the best system of government ever devised by the wisdom of associated men.

The ingenuity of despotism has never devised a system of oppression so strongly entrenched that there was not found among the common people of this liberty-loving race a man to bring it to ruin, or strip it of its power to do evil. There is no power beneath the heavens stronger than the will of this patriotic and intelligent race; nor one so reliable and so persistent in doing the right thing at the right time as the American Race, whose blood has been transmitted in strong currents from the three leading Aryan families—Celts, Teutons and Slavs. The welfare of the whole human family was, and hereafter will be, safe in the keeping of the educated descendants of this divinely-chosen, liberty-loving and God-worshipping family, reunited in America.

CHAPTER II.

THE HINDUS.

About one thousand years before Abraham's time, the Hindu branch of the Aryan family moved thru the northwest passes of the Himalayas into India, where they found numerous tribes of dark-skinned people in possession of the country, described by Ramayana, one of their chiefs, as of "fearful swiftness, unyielding in battle, and in color, like a dark blue cloud," but by the Vedic writers as "squat-faced, flat-nosed, gross-feeding, raw-eating Mongolians without gods or religious rites."

The progenitors of those dark-skinned aborigines entered India thru the northeast passes of the Himalayas, many ages before the Aryans. Their primitive language indicates that they came from three great stocks; 1, Tibet-Burman; 2, Kolorian; 3, Dravidian. The first group used twenty distinct dialects; the second, nine and the third, twelve.

The Aryans moved into India by whole communities and past from one river valley to another with their wives, little ones and cattle; each household father being a warrior, a husbandman and a priest. Marriage was still held sacred. There was then no polygamy. The husband and the wife, both ruled the house and together drew near to the their Creator in prayer. The father was priest to his own household and the chief was father and priest to the tribe, but in great festivals, a man learned in

holy offerings was chosen by the chief to conduct the offering in the name of the people. When the chief officiated his title was "Lord of the Settlers." Their women were held in high esteem and some of the most beautiful Vedic hymns were composed by them.

While still at the base of the Himalayas and before crossing the Hindus, the Aryan tribes quarreled among themselves, but united in wars against the dark-skinned aborigines, whom they reduced to bondage or drove before them into mountain recesses; while they were constantly pushed forward by later arrivals of their own stock, until finally settling, as undisputed victors, in what the Veda styled the Middle Land of the Sacred Singers, on the Ganges, where, in subsequent centuries they developed a civilization filled with mystery and strange wisdom, out of which have grown the creeds of more than one half of the human race, the influence of which spread into Africa and over Asia to the outer limits of China and Japan.

After conquering the dark-skinned aborigines, the new white-skinned masters of India planted the seeds of their own destruction by inaugurating a despotic system of castes, including not only those they had subjugated but their own people as well. The establishment of the "caste" system of government was the first step in parting from the simple patriarchal methods of their Iranic fathers and the worship of the supreme God of Creation. It opened wide the door for the demons of discord to enter and foment jealousy, hatred and turmoil, among all classes.

It is well for their Aryan descendants in America to ponder over this lesson and give serious thought to the progress made by despotism always by easy steps which are overlooked by the masses of the people, until it is too late to remedy them.

As we have stated, in early times, the father of an Aryan family was not only its head, but also its priest, to conduct religious sacrifices and ceremonies, and that the chief was considered the father and the priest of the tribe and conducted the tribal sacrificial ceremonies. As the art of writing was unknown the Vedic hymns and sacrificial words were committed to memory and handed down by word of mouth, from father to son. In tribal sacrifices, when the chief did not officiate, he selected some man especially learned in holy offerings to conduct the tribal ceremonies. Such a man was highly honored for his piety and was selected time and again to conduct tribal sacrifices, to chant the battle hymns, to implore divine aid or pray away the divine wrath.

In the course of time, the families who learned the sacrificial hymns by heart, became the hereditary owners of the liturgies required at the most solemn offerings to God. The most potent prayer was termed *Brahma*, and the priest offering it, *Brahman*.

Whosoever scoffs at the prayer we have made, may hot plagues come upon him. May the sky burn up that hater of Brahmins."

By degrees, a vast army of ministrants grew up around each of the tribal sacrificial places.

First—The officiating priests and their assistants

who prepared the sacrificial ground; drest the altar, slew the victims and poured out the libations.

Second—The chanters of the Vedic hymns.

Third—The reciters of other parts of the service.

Fourth—The supreme priests who watched over the whole and corrected mistakes.

The Rig-Veda, the great literary memorial and venerable hymnal of the primitive Aryans, was claimed by them to be the inspired words of God and to have existed "from before all time." However, instead of offering supplications to the supreme God of their Bactrian fathers, the Brahmans invoked thirty-three divinities, of whom eleven were in heaven; eleven on earth, and eleven dwelling in glory in mid-air. As a whole, their hymns were addressd to bright, friendly gods. Rudra, was God of Roaring Tempests; Vishnu, the preserver of the Shining Firmament; and Brahma, the creator. These constituted their triad of principal gods. Brahma, was the first Aryan man and existed millions of years ago.

While the Brahmans were building a new theory of creation and of their gods, the chief of the tribe and his men were contending with the dark-skinned aborigines for possession of the Ganges. After the Middle Land was secure and war with the aborigines ceased, the chieftains and their men-at-arms became degenerates, sensual and slothful. While at first they resisted the pretensions of the Brahmans, that they only and members of their families had divine authority to exercise the priestly offerings, the chieftains and their warrior compan-

ions, soon became willing tools in molding the will of the people to tamely fit into the new religious and civic proposals, as divine ordinances. This gave the Brahmans a free hand in forging mental and physical fetters, not only on the masses, but also on the chieftains themselves and their warriors.

In creating their diabolical system of castes, the Brahmans carefully made themselves the only members of the first caste. They declared their own persons sacred and inviolable and free from corporal punishment for crimes of all sorts. They also declared themselves free from taxes, and holders of all civic offices, even to be the advisors of the tribal chiefs.

The chiefs and warriors were constituted the second class. The tillers of the soil, merchants, tradesmen and mechanics composed the third caste, and these were heavily burdened with taxes, while holding their lands, not as owners, but as mere occupiers. Thus appeared the first feudal tenants in history. The servants and the laborers, called Sudras, descendants of the dark-skinned aborigines, constituted the fourth, or lowest caste. Every man was obliged to follow his father's occupation and intermarriage between castes was strictly forbidden. The violation of a rule of caste, was a crime worse than death and caused the transgressor to become an outcast—a Pariah—to be treated with the deepest contempt as the refuse of mankind. Outcasts could not live in towns, villages or cities nor in their vicinities. Everything they touched was considered unclean, even to look upon them, was considered pollution.

The evil genius of the King of Drakness, and his combined spirits of evil could not have conceived a more diabolical system of civic government than that given by the Brahman priests to the Hindus, as a divine ordinance. It checked the Aryan spirit of liberty and caused their civilization to lapse into a state of repose, where it has remained stagnant for more than four thousand years. All the Hindu branch of the Aryan family has given to the human race, is a copious mystic literature on theological creeds.

The Aryan descendants of India may boast of their priesthood; of their grotto temples in solid porphyry; of their bloody Juggernaut Gods and the sin-cleaning waters of the Ganges; of their store-houses, once overflowing with silks and fine linens, with gold, diamonds and precious stones; of their extensive rice fields and palm-groves; but they cannot boast of a single manly effort to prevent the repeated spoilation of their homes, wealth and temples, by the robber nations of the world, because they abandoned the one true God of their Bactrian fathers and worshipped the false, wayside gods erected by their Brahmans. They have been severely punished for more than twenty-five centuries by such despoilers as Darius, Mahmud, Alexander, Ghiznee, Zingis Khan, Tamerlane, Nader Shah; and last, but not least, the English—the most blighting scourge of all. Even now, there seems to be no end to the atonement they must still make to be rid of their crimes against God and humanity.

CHAPTER III.

THE MEDO-PERSIANS.

This branch of the Aryan family not only held the Bactrian home of their fathers, but after enduring many defeats, expulsions and deportations from sections and districts of their country, as well as grievous persecutions by fire and sword at the hands of the Shemetic nations of Southwestern Asia, finally extended their own dominion over the territories of their oppressors—the Chaldeans, the Syrians, the Babylonians, the Assyrians and the Lydians until they maintained a mighty empire covering the whole Iranic plateau and portions of India and Africa; extending over an area of about two million square miles. It was bounded by the Indian desert on the east, by the vast Scythian countries of Asia and Europe on the north, by the African desert and Greece on the west and by the Arabian desert and Etheopia on the south.

Here the Medo-Persians, under Cyrus the Great, established the first of the three great Aryan Empires of the world. The second was the Greco-Macedonian Empire of Alexander the Great, and the third, the Roman Empire of the Caesars.

We have no means of knowing when the Medes and Persians first appeared in Southwest Asia, but it seems that they were there three thousand years before the coming of Christ, because they were strong enough to place a Mede King over the Chal-

deans in 2286 B. C. They were then mere tribes under chiefs, without priest or kings, and scattered east of the Caspian Sea, from the valleys of the Oxus and the Jaxartes Rivers on the north, to the Persian Gulf on the south. They worshipt the Supreme, Invisible God and sustained the simple, patriarchal government of their fathers. In every home was an altar for divine worship, conducted by both the father and the mother of the family. Thus the Aryan family was the nucleus around which our civilization was developt. The primitive Aryan family was free from the blight of polygamy and was sanctified by the sacred bonds of matrimony. It was the safest base on which a revealed creed or a civic system could be maintained by a tribble or a nation, or from which the beneficent commands of the God of Creation could be past undefiled, down the turbulent currents of the ages, from generation to generation.

Tradition tells us that Shem, Ham and Japhet were sons of Noah and that Shem and Ham inhabited the valleys of the Euphrates, the Tigris and the Nile Rivers, where their descendants developt what has been called the Shemetic Civilization. That Japhet and his sons resided in the valleys of the Oxus and Jaxartes Rivers, and developt what is still called the Aryan Civilization. These ancestries are simply traditional. If Japhet was the ancestor of the Aryan family of nations, why did he locate so far north from the other brothers? Why the great difference in their creeds and governments, and who were the ancestors of the Fins, Scythys, Mongols and other Turanian tribes of the great

north, and of the numerous aborigines found in India by the Hindus and of those found by the Pelasgic-Celts in Africa and the Islands of Greece, and on the western shores and the mainland of Western Europe? We are not one of those who deny the divinity of man's parentage, or of the scientists who would trace their ascent up from a loathsome viper.

We believe the parents of the human race were for ages located on the Iranic plateau, in Central Asia, the cradle of all races, and that all were created by a Spiritual, Invisible God and placed on earth as representatives of His divine truth, purity and justice, and in spiritual communion with His Heavenly Home beyond the stars. That man, alone among all creatures, was endowed with a discerning mind, a moral conscience and a free will to enable him to judge between right and wrong in his thots, words and deeds. That inspired teachers, have from time to time, revealed to men and nations, the beneficent desires of God, as others will in the future. Tradition and history both show that tribes and nations, while obeying those divine revelations have been richly rewarded and those who defied them have been severely punisht, and not a few have entirely perisht.

From the earliest times, there has been a mixture of races. Even the Scyths, Turaneans and Mongols of the north, on several occasions, invaded the territory of the Assyrians, the Medo-Persians, the Greeks, the Romans and the Celts. Until the union of the Celts and Teutons the blending was not always for the best. Before coming into contact with

the Assyrians and Lydians, the habits of the Medes were simple and manly, but after the conquest of the Assyrians, they relaxed the stringency of their former simplicity and indulged in the pleasures of soft and luxurious living, which soon produced sensuality and degeneracy. The pure Zoroastrian worship of their fathers was corrupted by the introduction of a Magian-priesthood. Harems of wives and concubines, guarded by hosts of despised eunuchs, were introduced by the Median court and the wealthy classes; while their kindred in Persia, maintained in all their original stringency, the old Aryan habits and family worship, once common to both nations. Dwelling amid rugged mountains and on the high, upland plains southeast of Media, the Persians retained their primitive simplicity and but slightly intermingled with the Medes.

About 640 B. C., Cyrus the Great, then crown prince of Persia, while visiting the Median court at Ecbatana, became disgusted with the sensual life of the Median King, whose days were spent amid eunuchs, concubines and dancing girls, resolved to free his own people from the Median supremacy and restore the pure Zoroastrian religion which the Magian priesthood had corrupted.

In the war that followed, the Medes were the first victors, but in a fifth battle near Pasargadae, the Median Empire received its death blow in a general defeat. Cyrus, on the battle field, was proclaimed king of Media and Persia. Thus was founded the great Medo-Persian Empire which swayed the destinies of Western Asia and Northern Africa for centuries. The Greek cities of Asia

Minor, submitted to the dominion of Cyrus. The provinces of Babylonia, Susiana, Syria, Phoenicia, and Palestine were added to the new empire.

The conquest of Babylon removed the last Asiatic rival of Persia and amid its ruins perished the old, sensual Semitic civilization of Asia, after an existence of nearly two thousand years. The supremacy of the civilized world was transferred from the Semetic to the Aryan family of nations. The human race entered upon a new era of progress and activity, never before known. The Aryan family has since swayed the destinies of mankind in every sphere of human activity, in politics, science, art and literature; and in the rational worship of a Supreme, Invisible God, first revealed to man by the inspired Bactrian prophet Zoroaster, and again by Christ Jesus, the divine Redeemer, more than three thousand years afterward.

Compared with the Kings of previous and of subsequent reigns, Cyrus, the founder of the Medo-Persian Empire, stands out above all, as being the most worthy of the title of "Great." In the first year of his reign, he displayed his greatness by returning to the Hebrews, five thousand four hundred vessels of gold and silver, which Nebuchadnezzar had taken from the temples of Jerusalem. Unfortunately, none of his virtues was transmitted to his children. He was friendly and familiar with his subjects and mild with captives taken in war. His memory is still cherished with veneration by the Persians who hold his type of countenance as their standard of beauty. His domestic life was a model of simplicity, having had but one wife,

Cassandane, by whom he had two sons, Cambyases and Smerdis, and two daughters, Atossa and Atrystone.

After coming to the throne in 528 B. C., Cambyases married his sister, Atossa, and secretly murdered his brother Smerdis, which being kept hidden from the people gave the Magi-priests an opportunity to attempt the suppression of the Zoroastrian worship, and to replace it with the Magian-rites, and constitute themselves a priest-caste for Persia, as they had been in Media before being suppressed by Cyrus. To carry out their evil designs, they prepared one of their number to represent Smerdis as still living. To further their purpose, they encouraged Cambyases to make war upon Amasta, King of Egypt, in revenge for an insult in sending a common Egyptian maiden instead of his own daughter to be secondary wife for Cambyases, as had been demanded of him. In the war which followed the religious temples of Egypt were ruthlessly invaded; their priests were publicly scourged and their sacred images burned. To participate in a religious festivity, was a capital offense.

While in Syria, on his return from Egypt, in 522 B. C., Cambyases was informed by a herald that his brother Smerdis had been proclaimed the rightful King of the Medes and Persians. In a moment of despondency, Cambyases committed suicide with his own sword. The pseudo-Smerdis married Atossa and all of Cambyases widows and to conciliate the people, decreed a general remission of the taxes and military service for three years, but he was

careful not to leave his palace, nor allow a Persian to enter it, which caused the people to suspicion that he was not the real Smerdis, son of Cyrus. Finally, Darius, son of Hystaspes, armed his partisans, entered the palace and killed Smerdis in his private apartments, then caused a general massacre of the Magian priests.

Darius Hystaspes in 521 B. C., ascended the throne, restored the Zoroastrian worship and bound himself to select his officers and wives from the six families whose faithful men had secured for him the crown. Thereafter, these families constituted the Persian nobility; a model closely followed by subsequent despots.

The suppression of Magianism, produced rebellions in many of the Persian provinces but in five years, all were subdued. The empire was then divided and placed under twenty Satraps, all chosen from the six royal families. Postroads were established, over which couriers galloped in relays day and night like flying birds, between King and his Satraps. In 508 B. C., Darius invaded and despoiled the valley of the Indus and attached it to his empire. He then turned his arms against the Sythians occupying the great Steppe region now included in Southern Russia. For that purpose, he collected a fleet of six hundred ships from the Greeks in Asia Minor; and from the nations under his dominion, an army of more than seven hundred thousand men. With this army he crossed the Bosphorus, and followed what is now the celebrated Balkans, to the Danube and crossed into the Scythian country. As Darius advanced the Scyths slowly

retreated, with their cattle, after destroying all forage and filling up the wells, thus forcing the invading army to retire for want of subsistence; a military movement successfully repated by Russia against Napoleon, more than twenty-five centuries afterward.

In 506 B. C., Darius extended his dominions westward to the frontier of Macedonia, which hastened a general conflict between the Medo-Persian empire and the Grecian States, for the mastery of the world. In 502 B. C., the Ionian Greeks of Asia Minor, revolted against the Persian government and sent to Greece to solicit assistance. Athenians sent aid to the Asiatic colonies and twenty ships to Miletus, the chief city of the Ionian confederacy. They also invaded Lydia, captured and burned Sardis, its capital, because its Persian Satrap had insolently ordered them to receive back an exiled tyrant of Athens or incur the hostility of Persia. The Greeks after a protracted struggle, were defeated and had to succumb to Persia.

The news of the burning of Sardis, so enraged Darius, that he shot an arrow into the air, and prayed to heaven for power to punish the Athenians for that transaction. And, lest his vengeance should cool, he caused an attendant to remind him of the Greek conduct, every time he sat down at table. He sent heralds to all the Greek States demanding a tribute of earth and water as symbols of submission. Nearly all complied, but Athens and Sparta indignantly refused and stained their good names by throwing one of the heralds into a deep well, and

the others into a pit to help themselves to earth and water.

In 493 B. C., Darius sent an immense armament to the European shores of the Aegean Sea, under Mardonius, who disembarked his land forces on the coast of Macedonia; then sailed south with his fleet, but in doubling Mount Athos, a furious storm wreckt three hundred of his vessels and drowned twenty thousand of his men. By a night attack, the Thracians surprised his land forces and defeated them with great slaughter. With the shattered remains of his fleet and army, Mardonius hastily returned to Asia Minor.

Darius more intent than ever upon the subjugation of Greece, immediately collected a force of five hundred thousand men and six hundred ships. After reducing the Islands of the Aegean Sea, a force of one hundred thousand foot and ten thousand horsemen, landed on the coast of Attica and camped on the plain of Marathon, thirty miles from Athens, where they were boldly met and defeated by ten thousand Greeks under Miltiades. The Persian loss was more than six thousand, while that of Athens was only one hundred and ninety-two.

Marathon was duplicated by the glorious defeat of the British under Packenham, January 8, 1815, on the plains of Chalmette, near New Orleans, by General Jackson, when England attempted to steal from America, the Mississippi Valley, fifteen days after the treaty of Ghent had been signed; twenty-three centuries after the Greek Victory, and by men of the same race. The British loss in killed and

wounded was nearly two thousand, the American loss only sixty-seven.

The Marathon defeat stirred Darius to greater exertions, to humble Greece. He resolved on fitting out a great armament, but a revolt in Egypt interfered with his preparations and his death soon after, ended them. In 485 B. C. Xerxes took up his father's designs against Greece and spent four years in raising an army and building a fleet, then placed himself at the head of one million, seven hundred thousand infantry and four thousand cavalry, and directed his march toward the Hellespont. Twelve hundred ships of war and three thousand transports, carried six hundred thousand men.

At the pass of Thermopyle, this mighty host was met and severely punished by three hundred Greeks under Leonidas, who, after being abandoned by many of the confederate states, held the pass for three days and upon being entirely surrounded, faced the center of the enemy's camp and cut down great multitudes as they pressed forward to certain death; thus leaving an example to the men of the world as to how they should fight in defense of their homes and country. Xerxes' great army devastated Attica and burned Athens, but the Persians' naval force of thirteen hundred war vessels was defeated at Salamis, by a Grecian fleet of three hundred and eighty ships, under the eyes of the Persian monarch. Proudly seated on a magnificent throne, erected for the purpose on the summit of a mountain overlooking the sea and surrounded by his guards; while every hill and eminence along the shores of Attica was covered with his troops to view the coming

conflict and rejoice with their king over a glorious victory, which turned out to be the most disastrous defeat in the whole history of war.

The Grecian fleet won a complete victory, with the loss of forty ships and a few men, while the bodies of their enemies covered the sea, and their ships, not taken or destroyed, fled panic stricken in various directions. Xerxes, beholding his great fleet defeated and scattered, sprang in anguish from his throne of observation and rending his guady garments in a paroxysm of despair gave orders to his army to hastily withdraw from the Attica coast. The defeated remnants of his fleet returned to the Hellespont and the ports of Asia Minor, while the land forces led by Xerxes retreated to Thessaly.

Tho surrounded by millions of his armed followers, this Asiatic despot was so completely cowed and humbled by the freedom-loving Greeks that he deemed himself in danger as long as he remained in Europe. Leaving his general, Mardonius, with three hundred thousand men to continue the war with Greece, Xerxes returned to Sardis, the capitol of Lydia, and plunged into the wildest excesses of sensuality. His retreat was the most disgraceful on record. In the confusion and terror of his hasty flight, no arrangement was made to provide his immense army with provisions, therefore a famine and pestilence joined in adding to the horrors of the retreat. The line of march thru Thessaly, Macedonia and Thrace, was marked by heaps of dead bodies. Thus ended in disgraceful disaster, the mightiest expedition ever undertaken by an irre-

sponsible despot to deprive a free people of their liberty.

After the flight of his master from Greece, Mardonius continued his devastating war and for the second time burned Athens. At last, Sparta and other Peloponnesian States sent aid to Athens. Mardonius was forced to accept a general battle at Platea, in September 479 B. C., where he was defeated with great slaughter, Mardonius being among the slain. The rich treasure of his camps became the spoils of his victors. A sea fight on the same day, at Mycale, in Asia Minor, destroyed the last of the Persian fleet.

The rapid succession of defeats at Marathon, Thermopyle, Salamis, Platea and Mycale, completely destroyed the military spirit of the Persians. Xerxes with what was left of his two and one-half million fighting men, practically fled from European-Greece, never again to attempt its conquest. He then abandoned himself to the gratification of his lustful passions, not alone among women of his own seraglio, but with the princesses of his court and the wives of near relatives. Even his wife and daughter became openly licentious. His court officers and euchs conspired against their sovereign. The captain of his guard, a courtier of high rank, and his chamberlain, a euch, assassinated him in his sleeping apartment in 465 B. C., after he had reigned twenty years. The disorders of the court continued under his successors for 134 years, when the Medo-Persian Empire fell in ruins before the Greco-Macedonian Empire of Alexander the Great, which was soon to tumble in the dust under the assaults of the Roman Empire.

CHAPTER IV. PELASGIC CELTS.

To this branch of the Aryan family the world is indebted for the civilization of Greece and Rome. As to the time when they separated from the Gallic Celts and took possession of the peninsulas of Southern Europe, neither the Greeks nor the Gauls had even a tradition. The Greeks believed that their progenitors were always on the peninsula, tho not always called Hellenes, or their country Hellas: names which they applied to themselves. The appellations Greek, Greece and Grecians were in later years given to them by the Romans. However, many of their states were well established before their kindred, the Medo-Persians, appeared in the country southeast of them and imposed a king on the Chaldeans 2286 B. C., a power that existed three thousand years before the days of Abraham, the father of Israel.

The Pelasgic period of Greece, antedates that of the Hellenic, by many centuries. It was the period in which the people still revered the simple religion and manners of their Iranic fathers; when peace reigned among the kindred tribes and justice prevailed; when labor even by their chiefs was deemed honorable in obedience to the divine command to cultivate the soil; when agriculture was the general pursuit and war was still unknown among them; when their thots, words and acts were pure and

equity controlled their conduct. It was a period afterwards remembered as their Golden Age.

The historians and poets of the demoralized ages of the Olympic gods and goddesses, deny that such an age ever existed; but allege that the Pelasgians were savage barbarians, clothed in the skins of wild animals and that they lived in caves; that they fed on roots and nuts and disputed with the lion and the bear for dominion of the forest. We can no more believe that the people who produced the Golden Age of Greece, before they were Hellenized and learned the demoralizing art of aggressive war, were savage barbarians, than we can believe in the alleged divinity of the Olympian gods who introduced wars and openly practiced gross immoralities.

One of the Pelasgic tribes, called Hellenes, becoming more famous than the others, gradually assimilated the lesser ones. Then the chiefs of the consolidated tribes introduced a new theory of creation in which they claimed for themselves a superior descent above their fellows. They supplanted the patriarchal government and the revealed creed of their fathers. Falsehood and immorality took the place of truth and purity in religion, and war and despotism, the place of patriarchal justice, freedom and equality.

Nevertheless they could not eternally suppress the inherited spirit of liberty, derived from their Aryan fathers. The primitive rights of men to self-government came to them from distant ages, ingrained in the blood and bones of their race. Such rights tho frequently baffled in practice never for-

sook them. The spirit of their race in spite of their new divinities, made the Greek civilization wholly different from those that were developing in the Egyptian and Asiatic nations surrounding them. Grecian democracy placed their little city-states far in advance of the larger empires which surrounded them.

Instead of the Spiritual God of Creation being worshipped as the Benificent Creator and Ruler of the universe, the ambitious chiefs set themselves up as gods to be worshipt and obeyed; using their poetic fancy to produce a divine paternity for themselves which they transmitted to the despots of all subsequent ages.

According to their poetic creation: First, came Chaos, a shapeless mass of matter, but the Almighty Power brought the confused elements into order. The Prince of Darkness became the Consort of Chaos, from whose union came Gea, the Earth, and Uranus, heaven. The earth married heaven and begat Titan and Kronos, the God of Time. Titan being the elder, like a good feudal lord, gave up his dominions to his brother Kronos, who became the King of Heaven and Earth. Kronos married his sister Syble, known also as Rhea and Ops. Kronos received the kingdom from Titan on condition of destroying all of his male children; but Cyble concealed Zeus, Poseidon and Pluto. Titan and his half brothers, made war on Kronos, dethroned and captured him. His son Zeus and later gods, then took arms and assembled their forces on Mount Olympus. The Titans who each had fifty heads and a hundred arms collected their forces on Mount

Othrys. The war of the gods then commenct and continued for ten years. Zeus called the Cyclops and other powerful agents to his aid. Olympus was shaken to its foundations, the sea rose, the earth groaned and the forests trembled. Zeus flung his mighty thunder-bolts, the lightnings flasht, and the woods blazed. The Titans in return stormed the skies; threw massive oaks at the heavens, piled mountains upon each other and hurled them at Zeus. But Zeus triumpht by flinging the giants into the abyss below the earth and released his father from captivity.

Kronos after being deposed by Zeus found refuge in Italy and became the King of Latium and taught his new subjects the science of agriculture and other useful arts. In this story of the war of the gods, the demons of despotism gave deluded mortals their first lesson in aggression and brute force, and a base on which the divine rights of Kings have since rested in all parts of the world.

The Greeks represented Kronos, the God of Time, as an old man bent with age and infirmity, holding a scythe in his right hand, in his left a child, and by his side, a serpent biting its own tail.

Zeus became the supreme God after the expulsion of Kronos. He divided the dominion of the universe with his brothers Poseidon and Pluto. Reserving heaven for himself, he gave the sea to Poseidon, and the infernal regions to Pluto.

By hurling rocks and heaping mountains upon mountains, the Titans again stormed the skies, which disturbed the commencement of the reign of Zeus and so afrighted his gods that they fled to Egypt

to escape the fury of the Titans but with the aid of Heracles, Zeus hurled the Titans back into their abyss below the earth.

The throne of Zeus was on the summit of Olympus, in perpetual sunshine, far above and free from the sorrows of the lower world. There, the gods by whom the affairs of mortals were governed, feasted on ambrosia and nectar, and deliberated upon the affairs of heaven and earth, and listened to the music of Apollo's lyre and the songs of the muses. Zeus and his gods and goddesses had all the vices and passions of common mortals and resorted to the most unworthy artifices to accomplish the basest deeds in both war and love.

Zeus was represented as majestic, on a throne of gold, under a canopy of ivory, yielding a thunderbolt in one hand and in the other a scepter. Poseidon was also majestic, but with a grim and angry aspect. He had black hair and blue eyes, and wore a blue mantel. The Isthmian games were founded in his honor. Apollo was represented as graceful youth, crowned with laurel, a bow and arrow in one hand and a lyre in the other. Ares, the god of war, was represented as an old man with a fierce countenance and armed with a helmet, a pike and a shield. He sat in a chariot drawn by furious horses, called Flight and Terror. His sister Bellona, the goddess of war, guided his chariot. Discord, in tattered garments, holding a torch in his hand, goes before them; while clamor and anger follow. Hephaistos, or Pluto, the god of fire and patron of all who worked in metals, forged the thunderbolts of Zeus and the arms of the gods and demi-gods, and their

golden chariots. He created Pandora, the first woman of clay, whom all the gods endowed with precious gifts. Zeus gave her a beautiful box to be given to the man who became her husband. When opened by her husband vast numbers of evils and distempers issued forth and spread over the world where they still remain. Hope only remained in the bottom of the box enabling the human race to bear its sorrows with resignation and fortitude. The servants of Hephaistos were called Cyclops, demons of great stature, who had only one eye in the middle of the forehead and fed on human flesh. The king of all the Cyclops, had Ulysses and sixteen of his Captives in Sicily, devouring two of them at a meal. Ulysses made the monster intoxicated with wine. put out his eye with a fire-brand and escaped Hermes, called Mercury in Latin, was the messenger of the gods and the patron of traveling shepherds. He directed the souls of the dead to the infernal regions. He presided over merchants, orators, thieves and all dishonest persons. He taught the arts of buying, selling and trading. The day he was born he displayed his thievish propensities by stealing cattle from Apollo. To prevent Apollo from bending his bow against him, he stole his quiver and arrows. He robbed Róseidon of his trident and Aphrodita of his girdle; Ares of his sword; Zeus of his scepter and Hephaistos of his mechanical instruments. He was represented as an old man with a cheerful countenance with wings on his cap and wearing sandals, holding in his hand the caduceas, or rod entwined with two serpents. By a touch of this wand, he could awake those who slept, or put those awake to sleep.

The foregoing were the six great gods of the Olympian world. The six great goddesses, or queens, were Here, called Juno in Latin, the great goddess of nature and the wife and sister of Zeus; Athene, or Pallas, called Minerva in Latin, the daughter of Zeus and goddess of civilization, learning and art; Artemis, called Dianna in Latin, the moon goddess and the goddess of hunting and the twin sister of Apollo; Aphrodite, called Venus in Latin, the goddess of beauty and love; Hestia, called Vesta in Latin, the goddess of domestic life; Demeter, called Ceres in Latin, the goddess of corn and harvests.

Besides the twelve great gods and goddesses on Mount Olympus, there were numerous other deities; every field forest and river had its special divinity. The shrubs, trees, winds and seasons, boundaries and human passions; every conceivable thing was controlled by an imaginary divinity.

The Greeks believed that the souls of men were immortal and subject to future rewards and punishments, according to the good or evil deeds of mortals in this life. In the time of Socrates and Plato, many of the Greeks believed in a Supreme and All-powerful God, the Creator and Ruler of the entire universe. The Greeks also believed in a place of punishment for the wicked called Tartarus; a dismal abode of darkness and terror; a dreary place where criminals writhe under the merciless lash of avenging furies. They also believed in an Elysium, a delightful abode for the righteous, amid groves of rich verdure and streams of silvery clearness; the air pure and temperate; the woods resounding with

warbling birds and the inhabitants free from care or sorrow, spending their time enjoying the pleasures they had experient on earth.

The theogony developed by the Greeks, the Hindoos, the Medo-Persians; the Egyptians, yea, even the Israelites and after them by the early Romans, notwithstanding the greatness attained by each, contained the seeds of their own destruction as nations. Their imaginary gods and goddesses were the creations of selfish men and used by them to intimidate and control the masses, in mental and physical bondage. They were all extremely immoral. The Olympian gods and goddesses with their illicit loves with mortals, introduced methods that filled the palaces with concubines, strumpets, bastards and assassins, and time and again covered the earth with human blood.

The Pelasgic Celts maintained republican governments in petty, disconnected states for about 1850 years. Their states were mere cities, frequently at war with each other, but united against the aggressions of the Egyptians and the Asiatic nations. After the defeat of the Medo-Persians, under Xerxes, Philip of Macedon artfully created discords among the Grecian states, destroyed their republican systems and establisht a monarchy on their ruins in 338 B. C. Two years after the destruction of the Grecian republics, Philip was assassinated on the street by one of his own nobles who was immediately put to death for the crime by Philip's son, afterward Alexander the Great, who said the assassin was bribed by Persia in order to divert suspicion from himself and mother, Olympias. Alexander had

previously quarrelled with his father because of the ill-treatment of his mother.

In twelve years, this new man of blood, Alexander the Great, extended the Greco-Macedonian Empire of his father, over Africa, Asia, India, and the vast Scythian country of the frozen north. Before reaching the age of thirty-three years, his word and will constituted the law of the known world, enforced by the swords of his generals, to whom Alexander was both emperor and god. Returning from the conquest of India, Alexander remained for a short season in Babylon, where he indulged in the excessive use of wine which caused his death in 323 B. C.

Because of the rapid increase of their race, the Greeks in the very early days, established colonies of their people from the Sea of Azov to the Pillars of Hercules, and from Scythia to Arabia. They settled in the Aegina in 1358 B. C. They covered the northern shores of the Mediterranean with settlements and sent Aeolians, Ionians and Dorians to Sicily, Gaul and Asia Minor; the Achians to Italy, Sicily, Gaul and Spain and their adjacent islands. They sent Milesians to the Crimea, the coast of Scythia, to the River Tyras (now Dniester), to modern Kertch, to the River Taneis (now Don), to the site of modern Sebastopol; to Ireland and Northern Africa. Their first settlement in Italy was at Cumæ, in 1130 B. C. Their settlements became so numerous that Italy was called Great Greece. They founded Malaga in Spain and Marseilles in France and spread from those centers eastward and westward along the coast of Gaul.

Their cities on the Asiatic side of the Bosphorus, were emporiums for the products of the Caucasus countries and for those of Central and Southern Asia as they passed to Europe by way of the Caspian Sea and the Oxus. They diffused their influence from the shores of the Mediterranean, the Aegian and the Euxus until it spread over the greater portion of the ancient world. Wherever their language was spoken or their civilization reached, there too was found the Dominion of Hellas.

In the toils and dangers of defensive and aggressive wars, in which all shared alike, the Greeks developed the heroic qualities for which they were noted above all other people. There, also, the Pan-Hellenic pride of race and country was produced which united their numerous states and colonies and held them in readiness to suspend their petty strifes and discords and unite as one against a common enemy. The use of a common language and literature; the life-blood of all respecting nations, maintained for nearly three thousand years, the high spirit of the race, worshipping their Olympic gods whose rites, temples, festivals and games were open alike to all.

How soon after the Pelasgic "Golden Age," monarchy was established by the usurping leaders who peopled the mountains, and vales with gods, goddesses and demons—history does not tell us, but it does say that monarchy existed at a very early period and was claimed as a hereditary right by the Temnide family, claiming descent from the Olympic gods. However, in 1126 B. C., the people disposed of monarchy and adopted the republican system as

being more favorable to the freedom and morality of the people.

While Greece was united, it successfully coped with the Medo-Persians and other remote empires, but as soon as its republican states became divided, it fell an easy prey to the Macedonians, a semi-barbarious tribe of their own race, led by Philip, who skillfully fomented internal quarrels among the republican states then, in the name of peace, joined his own arms with one republic against another, until at the battle of Cheronea, all fell helpless at his feet and ended forever their republican glory. Yet, tho the republics were dead, the spirit of their arts, ideas, language and literature continued to stimulate for centuries the Hellenized people of Egypt, Asia and Europe and is now stimulating the free institutions of America.

The Greco-Macedonian Empire erected by Philip over the republican ruins of Greece and extended by his son, Alexander the Great, to the limits of civilization, was torn to pieces by Alexander's generals within thirty years after the death of their great commander. But the world soon found that a branch of the same race had produced a new master, which was waiting near the mouth of the Tiber in Italy, to take up the reins of despotism as they fell from the hands of Alexander's generals.

CHAPTER V. THE ROMANS.

We have seen at the fall of the Greco-Macedonian Empire that the Pelasgic Celts had colonies in all parts of Europe and that Italy was called Great Greece. Poetic fiction and tradition tell us that after the fall of Troy, Aeneas, one of its famous warriors, led a band of his countrymen to the western shores of Italy and founded the City of Lavinium, killed the King of Latium and united his subjects with his own followers and called the united people Latins. Many centuries afterwards, a king named Pocras, who had two sons, Numitor and Amulius, reigned over the Latins. Numitor was entitled to succeed his father, but Amulius seized the throne, caused the son of Numitor to be slain and his daughter Sylva to be made a vestal virgin. Sylva married Mars, the god of war, by whom she had twin sons, Romulus and Remus. Amulius ordered the infants drowned in the Tiber, but the basket containing them floated to the foot of the Palatine Hill, where they were saved by a she-wolf taking them to her den and nursing them as her own offspring. A shepherd found and reared them at his own house. At length Remus was taken before Amulius, but was rescued by Romulus and friends who killed Amulius and placed Numitor on the throne.

Romulus and Remus desiring to build a city on

Palatine Hill, inquired of the gods which should give his name to the city. After watching the heavens a day and a night, at sunrise Remus saw six vultures. Soon after Romulus saw twelve, showing that the gods favored him. Romulus began the city by enclosing a space with a low wall and ditch, over which Remus leapt exclaiming "Will this keep out an enemy"? The act was deemed insulting and caused his death by Romulus. The City was founded in 753 B. C.

Such a commencement, drew an influx of criminals and fugitives from justice, desperate characters of all kinds and exiles, all seeking refuge. The population rapidly increased and Romulus was chosen king. It is said that the citizens being without wives and their Sabine neighbors refusing to give them their daughters, Romulus prepared a great feast to which the neighbors were all invited and came with their wives and daughters. At a signal from Romulus the Romans rushed on the visitors and carried off their maidens for wives.

This outrage caused war between the Sabines and Romans. After many battles, the wives of the Romans rushed between the contending forces and caused them to suspend hostilities and secured a union of both nations with Romulus and Titus Tatius, the Sabine, as joint Kings. But Romulus soon killed his companion and reigned alone. After reigning thirty years, while at a meeting in the Field of Mars, the day suddenly became as dark as night by an eclipse of the sun, his father, Mars the god of war, took Romulus in his fiery-chariot to heaven.

Numa Pompilius, a Sabine, succeeded Romulus.

His reign was peaceful. The gates of the Temple of Janus, remained closed. He encouraged agriculture, industry and peace, the love of right and justice. He was the first law giver of the Romans, obtaining religious directions from the Nymph Egeria in her sacred grove, which he incorporated in his laws. He died at the age of eighty (672 B. C.), after a prosperous reign of forty-two years. The books of his laws were buried near him in a separate tomb. This reign, too, is considered mythical.

The early Roman government was a monarchy; the king being elective and called "Rex," meaning ruler or director. The death of the king was followed by an interregnum, during which the government was administered by the Senate or Council, whose ten chief men, called Decem Prima, exercised the royal authority, each in his turn for five days. The senate elected the king and the people confirmed the choice. Next to the king were the hereditary patricians who claimed descent from a noble ancestry. There were originally one hundred of these so-called noble families, called "Gentes," but they were afterwards augmented to two hundred by the union of the Roman and Sabine nobles. Each house or family was represented by its chief in the senate or council of the king. The members of a family had a single clan-name. All possessed rights of property in common and to participate in sacred rites. Males of noble rank and full age had the right to attend the public assembly where they were divided into ten curiae, each consisting of ten families. Each curiae had its chief, styled Curio. The chief of the ten curiones presided over the Comitia

Curiata, and was called Curio Maximus. No change of law could be effected without the consent of the senate and the Comitia Curiata. The senate could both discuss and vote upon public measures, but the Comitia Curiata could only vote upon them, but had the privilege of deciding upon peace and war, and was a court of appeals for any of its members, from the decisions of the king or of a judge.

Besides the patricians, there were two other classes in the early Roman state—clients and slaves. The clients were dependents of the patricians and were the poorer class. They could choose a particular patron and bear his clan name. Tho personally free, they possess no civil or political rights. They tilled the lands of their patrons or conducted a trade under their protection. They followed their patrons to war and contributed to their ransom or to that of their children in case of capture. They paid the costs of law suits in which their patrons became involved, also the expense of their services in public office. A patron protected the interests of his client at the legal tribunals when necessary. The relation of patron and client descended from father to son and it was regarded as a great distinction for a noble house to have a large clientage, and to extend that which it had inherited from its ancestry. Slaves in the times of kings, were not numerous, but were treated as the same unfortunate classes in other countries.

By adding three tribes of Albans to his subjects, Tullius Hostilius increased the number of the patricians by three hundred gentes or noble houses, but they were not at first admitted to the senate. He

also increased to six, the number of the Vestal Virgins.

Anceus Martius was the fourth king and the second religious lawgiver of Rome. He was a grandson of Numa Pompilius and reigned twenty-four years. By war he added a number of Latin towns to his kingdom and organized them into a distinct class of freemen, afterwards known as plebians.

The fifth king was Tarquin the Elder. He was of Grecian descent and reigned thirty-eight years. He enlarged the population and dominion of Rome and greatly improved the city. He increased the senate from two to three hundred members by the addition of younger houses and doubled the patrician houses. He was assassinated in 578 B. C., by hired agents of the sons of Anceus Martius, to obtain the crown for themselves, but their purpose was defeated by Tarquin's son-in-law, Servius Tullius, who became the sixth king.

Servius Tullius changed the constitution and is known as the civil law-giver of Rome. Previous to his reign, the patricians alone, had civil and political rights. They held all offices, civil and clerical; they owned the public lands and the privilege of using a family name; in fact, they were the only people in a political sense. Servius Tullius invested all classes of freeman with the franchise. This gave the plebeians a share in the government. He established a popular assembly in which patricians and plebeians voted alike. He divided the whole body of citizens into classes according to their wealth and subdivided the classes into Centuries in proportion to the wealth of the whole class. To each century,

was given only one vote in the assembly, but that gave the richer classes a superior power, and if they differed, the poorer classes decided the question in dispute.

Wealth was now given the power previously held by rank. Every property holder was required to serve in the army and took rank according to his wealth. The city was divided into four tribes and the country into twenty-six; each tribe composed of land owners, regardless of rank. The whole thirty tribes met in the assembly of the tribes in the Forum at Rome, while the assembly of the centuries, convened outside the city walls on the Field of Mars. Hitherto, the tribes in the Forum had all the powers of self-government, electing their own Tribunes and Judges. The plebeians were now invested with self-government and with the assessment and collection of the land tax, which the tribunes were obliged to levy, collect and pay into the public treasury. He allotted in full ownership, public land to the plebeians on the Etruscan side of the Tiber, which he acquired in war. This greatly exasperated the patricians who held the land under lease from the state for pasturage for their cattle and flocks. Servius Tullius resolved to abdicate after reigning forty-eight years, from 578 to 534 B. C. For this purpose he assembled the people in Comitia Centuriata to choose by their free votes two chief magistrates to administer the government for one year and provide for the election of their successors in like manner, before the end of their terms of office.

The patricians deeming it an infringement on

their rights, revolted under the lead of Tarquin the Proud, son of Tarquin the Elder, and son-in-law of Servius Tullius, and placed Tarquin on the throne as the seventh and last king of Rome, who soon proved himself to be an unscrupulous tyrant. He set all the laws of the good Tullius aside, restored the privileges of the patricians, but when he thought himself secure, he oppressed all alike. His insolence disgusted all classes. Finally the vile conduct of his son, Sextus, toward Lucretia, which caused her to commit suicide, so aroused the fury of the people that they expelled the Tarquins, and abolished monarchy forever in 508 B. C. The people of Rome, then made a solemn vow "Man to man, for themselves and their posterity, that henceforth they would not tolerate a king." It is said that this vow kept Julius Caesar and his imperial successors from assuming the title of king, four hundred and eighty-one years afterwards. The title was retained only in the religious office of "King for offering sacrifices so that the gods might not miss their accustomed mediator," but he was disqualified from holding any other office. Thus this official became first in rank and least in power of all Roman magistrates.

As the founders of Rome were chiefly Pelasgic Celts, they brought with them the worship of the Olympic gods and goddesses. Jupiter, Mars, Jove, Diana, Juno, Neptune and Bacchus were the principal deities of the Roman people as they had been in Greece. Over the entrance of every Roman house, was a little chapel of the Lares, the spirits of the good men and ancestors of the family, to whom the father paid his devotions whenever he entered his

dwelling on returning from a journey. In every city under the Romans there were public Lares, or protecting divinities, worshipt in a temple or chapel, usually located at a street crossing. The name of the tutelary divinity of a community was kept secret and unpronounced lest an enemy should learn it and calling the god by name, should entice it beyond its bounds.

The Romans also incorporated the Grecian Mythologies into their own religious system. They consulted the Delphic oracle and were guided by its utterances, also the Greek oracles in Southern Italy. They accepted from the inhabitants of Magna Grecia, tokens enscribed with utterances of the Cumean Sibylla, a priestess of Apollo at Cume, near Naples.

The Romans maintained four sacred colleges: the augurs, the pontiffs, the heralds and the keepers of the Sibylline Books. The augurs were held in the highest honor, and consisted of sixteen members. Their duty was to ascertain the will of the gods. No public act, such as elections, passing of laws or declaring of war, was undertaken without consulting the augurs, on the theory that the gods ruled the state and the magistrates were only their deputies. In the struggles between the patricians and the plebeians, the augurs were unfair to the latter. The plebeians being originally foreigners, they were considered by the augurs as having no share in the Roman gods, who were the exclusive patrons of the patricians. Even after a change in the constitution, allowing the plebeians to be elected to high offices, the augurs declared their election null and void, on

the pretext that the auspices had been irregular, and as none had a right to appeal from their decisions their vote was absolute.

The pontiffs, the most famous of their religious institutions, established by Numa Pompilius, superintended all public worship and gave instruction to all who applied for it, respecting the ceremonies with which the gods might be approached. The highest magistrate as well as the private individual submitted to their decrees; provided three members of the college agreed in the decision, but as these dignitaries were mere men, they made the mistakes of men and often did so intentionally in prolonging in an office a favorite consul, or in cutting off one they did not approve. They alone, as keepers of the calendar, knew the days and hours for the transaction of public business. After the subversion of the republic the Emperors assumed the title of Supreme Pontiff and transmitted it to the Pope in Modern Rome.

The heralds guarded the public faith in dealing with other nations. In case of war by Rome against another nation, it was the duty of the herald to enter the territory of the enemy and four times to set forth the cause of the complaint,—once on each side of the Roman boundary, then to the first citizen he met, to the magistrates at the seat of government, and invoke Jupiter to give victory to those having a just cause.

The keepers of the Sibylline Books were priests of particular gods, such as Jupiter and Mars. They were not allowed to hold civil offices, but their dignity and purity were guaranteed by law. They

were not allowed to mount a horse or to look upon an army without the walls of Rome.

After the good Servius Tullius completed his census in 534 B. C., he caused the city and the people to be purified by prayers and sacrifices to avert the anger of the gods. This custom after each registration, which occurred every five years, was repeated during the continuance of the Republic.

The leaders who destroyed the Roman Monarchy and established the Republic, restored the constitution of Servius Tullius and improved it. Still Rome was far from being a free government. The patricians soon commenced to deprive the plebeians of concessions granted during the wars that followed the expulsion of Tarquin. These wars were instigated among the Etruscans and adjoining monarchies and left the Roman masses in general poverty. Previous to these wars, the majority of the Roman people derived their support from the soil. The ravages of hostile neighbors and the loss of lands west of the Tiber caused much suffering among the people. The necessities of the government caused an increase of taxes and a demand for immediate payment for five years. The patricians held all the offices and exempted themselves from the payment of taxes, which soon made them very wealthy. During the wars, the lands of the plebeians remained uncultivated and many of their homes were destroyed by the enemy. As they had to serve in the army without pay they borrowed money from the patricians at exorbitant rates of interest which they could not discharge. The patricians enforced the cruel law relating to the collection of debts to

the fullest extent. According to this harsh law when a debtor was unable to meet an obligation when due, his estate was seized and he and his family became slaves to his creditor, or they were thrown into prison and maltreated. Many sold themselves as slaves to their patrician creditors. The debtors who refused to sign away their own and their children's liberty were cast into prison, loaded with chains, and were starved or tortured by cruel creditors. The patrician's castles on the hills of Rome, contained gloomy dungeons where plebeians suffered untold atrocities at the hands of the cruel patricians. At length an old man covered with rags,—pale and emaciated, escaped from his creditor's prison, rushed into the forum and implored the aid of the people. He showed them the scars of his wounds which he had received in twenty-eight battles fighting for Rome. He told them that his house had been burned by the enemy in the Etruscan war; that his taxes were nevertheless vigorously exacted from him; that he had been obliged to borrow money and finally after losing all his property and being unable to pay, he and his two sons were enslaved by his creditor. He also showed them the marks of the stripes which his creditor inflicted upon his body. He was immediately recognized as a brave captain in the late war. The plebeians with rage and indignation demanded relief from such outrages. At this instant, news reached Rome that the Volscians had taken up arms against the Romans. The plebeians rejoiced at this news and refused to enlist in the army and told the patricians to fight their own battles. As the

plebeians could not be forced to enlist, the Consuls promised them relief and conceded their demands for release of the imprisoned debtors. Thereupon many plebeians joined the military ranks, but as soon as the Volscians were defeated, the plebeians were ordered back to their prisons.

Driven to despair by patrician tyranny, the plebeians fourteen years after the founding of the Republic (495 B. C.) withdrew in a body from Rome and retired to the Sacred Mountain on the opposite side of the Tiber, to found a new city where they might live and govern themselves by just and equal laws. Seeing that they could not afford to lose the services of so large and useful a class the patricians sent ten influential and friendly senators to treat with the plebeians and to induce them to return to Rome.

The senatorial envoys conceded the demands of the plebeians. All claims against insolvent debtors were canceled and the imprisoned and enslaved debtors were released. Two tribunes of the people were to be elected annually to defend and protect the rights and interests of the plebeians and to veto any measures which might endanger their rights and liberties. Two plebeian Ediles were appointed to superintend the streets, buildings, markets and public lands, games and festivals and the general order of the city; also, to guard the decrees of the senate from being tampered with by patrician magistrates. After securing these rights the plebeians returned to Rome where they took an active part in the future affairs of the republic, and forced on the patricians a nearly perfect democracy. Forty-

six years afterwards they left Rome for the second time because of the vile outrage of Virginia by Appius Claudius, a patrician Decemvir. To induce their second return, the senate abolished the Decemvirate (449 B. C.). Appius and his guilty colleagues were cast into prison where Appius committed suicide. The other Decemvirs fled from Rome and their property was confiscated. The Decemvirate was succeeded by a government composed of two consuls, freely elected by the whole body of the free citizens in Comitia Centuriata. The Tribunate of the plebeians was restored as it existed before the establishment of the Decemvirate. The people were given an appeal to the Comitia Curiata from the sentence of the consuls. The Ediles were again entrusted with the decrees of the senate to protect them from being ignored or falsified by the magistrates. The Tribunes were given the right to initiate legislation by consulting the tribes assembled in the Comitia Tributa.

In 449 B. C., the patricians renewed their opposition to the laws past for the benefit of the plebeians which caused them for the third and last time to secede from Rome and start a new city west of the river, but a compromise was effected and the plebeians once more returned.

In 392 B. C., the Gallic Celts first appeared in the vicinity of Rome, tho they had crossed the Alps eight years before and were masters of the Valley of the Po. They now advanced across the Apennines into Etruria with their women and children and laid siege to Clusium, whose citizens appealed to Rome for aid. The Romans sent ambassadors

to notify the Gauls that the Clusians were allies of Rome and requested them to retire from Italy. The Gauls replied that they wanted the land and that the Clusians must divide their territory with them. The Roman ambassadors being angry at their failure, joined the Clusians in an attack on the besieging Gauls. Brennus, the commander of the Gauls, immediately turned toward Rome with seventy thousand men and after a desperate battle entered Rome as its first conqueror, and left the city a heap of ruins.

From the founding of the Roman Republic, to the appearance of the Gauls, the Etruscans were the most persistent enemy. While the Gauls left Rome in ruins; at the same time, they crushed the Etruscans and thus relieved the Romans from future danger from that aristocratic power. The disturbing Umbrians, Sabines, Latins, Equi and the Volsci, were so crippled by the Gauls, that they were unable to profit by the misfortune of the Republic.

The retreat of the Gauls from Rome was followed by general distress. Their farms had been laid waste; their fruit trees, buildings, implements, stock and stores destroyed—even the seed corn for the next year's sowing had been burned. This with the rebuilding of the city and the excessive taxation for the restoration of the fortresses and the temples, forced the poor again to borrow money from the rich at exorbitant interest. When unable to pay the debts the poor were dragged from their homes and fields, to toil as slaves in the shops or fields of their merciless creditors, which started a movement among the plebeians to seek refuge in Etruria

from the injustice and arrogance of the patricians. This was prevented by the appeals of Camillius to their patriotism not to abandon the spot chosen by Romulus.

While deliberating on the subject a fortunate omen induced them to remain. A centurion marching to relieve the guard gave the command: "Hält; here is the best place to stay." A senator exclaimed: "A happy omen! The gods have spoken—we obey." Enthusiasm seized the multitude who cried with one voice: "Rome forever!"

Just before the advent of the Gauls, Rome was engaged in war with the Etruscans and had captured Veii. Many of the plebeians remained in that vicinity rather than longer continue under patrician oppressions, but the conquered Etruscans were brought to Rome to supply the deficiency in population. The new settlers were given public lands and organized into four new tribes, constituting one-sixth of the population of the restored city, and fully invested with the civil and political rights of Roman Citizenship, but their addition gave no relief to the plebeians of Rome, only adding the haughty, rich Etruscans to the already too strong patricians.

Marcus Manlius championed the cause of the oppressed plebeians. He belonged to the patricians, but sold his own lands and used the proceeds in paying the debts of the poor, delivering them from imprisonment and slavery. This won the gratitude of the plebeians and brought them in great throngs to his home where he denounced the selfish cruelty of the patricians for relieving themselves of the

whole burden of the public calamity by shifting it to the shoulders of the plebeians. He also accused them of embezzling vast sums raised to replace the treasuries of the temples, which had been borrowed to bribe the Gauls to retire from Rome. For this last charge he was cast into prison and after his release he again denounced them with greater vigor. He fortified his house on Capitoline Hill and with the aid of the plebeians held the heights in defiance of the government. This was manifest treason and turned even the Tribunes of the plebeians against him. The heroic defender of the Capitol was brought before the Comitia Centuriata for trial. When he appeared he was followed by many comrades whose lives he had saved in battle, defending Rome from the Gauls, and by four hundred debtors he had rescued from patrician prisons. He exhibited the spoils of thirty foes whom he had slain in battle and forty crowns or other honorary rewards bestowed upon him by his generals. He appealed to the gods whose temples he had saved from desecration and bade the people to look to the Capitol, the scene of his greatest glory, ere they pronounce judgment against him. The spot where he stood alone at the Capitol against the besieging Gauls could be seen from the forum where he was being tried. Nevertheless, he was condemned for treason and thrown headlong from the Tarpeian Rock, the rocky cliff of the Capitoline Hill facing the Tiber. The scene of his glory became that of his punishment. To satisfy the vengeance of the patricians, the house which had been built for him as a reward for his valor, was ordered to be razed and his family

were forbidden to bear the name of Manlius. In all the crimes committed by the patricians against the plebeians, there was none as infamous as this.

A severe plague visited the city shortly after the execution of Marcus Manlius, which the people ascribed to the anger of the gods, because of the destruction of the hero who had saved their temples from pollution.

The strength of the patricians, after their triumph over Manlius, increased to such an extent, that the plebeians stood in awe of their power and failed for some time to exhibit their former spirit and courage in struggles with their oppressors. The sufferings of the plebeians continued to increase for seven years. Their old men were so hopelessly discouraged that they refused to accept public office. But if the people would only trust God and be true to themselves, no such despotism could exist for a year in any country. It required only two men to end the miserable oligarchy that was crushing the life out of Rome.

Caius Licinius Stolo and Lucius Sextius Lateranus, became Tribunes of the plebeians in 376 B. C. To relieve the general poverty and the political inequality under which the plebeians were suffering, they proposed three measures as the Licinian Laws.

The first of these laws, designed to give immediate relief, proposed that the enormous interest already paid upon debts, should be reckoned as so much defrayed on the principal and deducted from the sum still due, and the balance paid in installments spread over a period of three years. The

second law, to prevent future poverty, provided that the public lands which the patricians had absorbed, should be thrown open, equally to the plebeians; that no person should hold more than five hundred jugera—about three hundred acres—of the public lands, or pasture more than one hundred oxen, or five hundred sheep upon the undivided portion, and that each landowner should employ a certain amount of free labor in cultivating his farm. The third law, to remedy political inequality, restored the Consulate; with the provision that one of the consuls for each year should be a plebeian. To make the gain of the commons secure, provision was made for increasing the Keepers of the Sibyllin Books to ten; five of them to be plebeians.

The patricians resisted the passage of these laws for nine years, but they were formally accepted and ratified by the Senate and Comitia Curiata in 367 B. C. The office of Praetor was created and confined exclusively to the patricians. The new officer was to exercise the civil and judicial functions hitherto exercised by the consuls, but the consuls retained the absolute military power. Upon the termination of this long struggle, between the patricians and the plebeians, Camillus dedicated the Temple of Concord on Capitoline Hill. The first plebeian consul under the Licinian Laws was Lucius Sextus Lateranus. In less than half a century, both the praetorship and the dictatorship, were open to the plebeians. The constitution of Licinian tho ignored for about twenty years by the patricians, finally resulted in making Rome a pure democracy.

The Gauls again invaded the territory of Rome

and encampt within five miles of the city, in 367 B. C., but retired without fighting and marched into Campania where they were defeated. The remnants of their army campt on the Alban Mount in the winter of 350 B. C. and joined the Greek pirates on the coast in ravaging the country, until driven out by the Romans the following year. In 346 B. C. the Gauls entered into a treaty with the Romans, and never again entered Latium.

The struggle between aristocracy and democracy, out of which grew the Roman Constitution was followed by a series of wars with the Samnites, a Sabine Race who occupied the snow covered mountain range separating the Apulian plain from the Campanian, but reacht the coast between Naples and Paestum, and contained the unfortunate cities of Herculaneum and Pompeii. The Samnites rankt very high among the war-like races of Italy.

In the first Samnite war the Roman arms were crowned with success, and both consuls were honored with a triumph. Their plebeian soldiers were still suffering from great poverty and their continued absence from their farms caused great disaster among their families, which caused the plebeians during the second year of the war to manifest a disposition to mutiny and settle their long quarrel with the patricians. The consuls endeavored to disband the army before the mutiny came to an outbreak, but their purpose was thwarted by plebeians rising in an open rebellion at once and marching to Rome, where they demanded immediate redress for their grievances. On their march to Rome, they released all slaves for debt, found working in the

fields of their creditors, and formed a fortified camp on the slope of the Alban Hills where they were joined by the oppressed plebeians from the city.

The government hastily levied an army to suppress the mutiny and placed it under the command of Valerius, who was appointed dictator for the emergency. His family had always been faithful friends of the commons and was esteemed by all classes for his generous character and military glory.

When the two armies composed of plebeians met, they refused to fight. The army under Valerius would not attack the mutinous troops because they were their brothers who had simply risen to right the wrongs of their class, and not from disloyalty to their country; while the mutinous army would not attack their fellow plebeians and defenders of their common country. The armies simply stood facing each other until remorse and pity had overcome the resentment between the patricians and the plebeians, when both sides rushed forward with outstretched arms and tears in their eyes and requested forgiveness. The senate was thus obliged to concede all just demands and amnesty for the irregular proceedings of the troops, which ended in a permanent peace between the two old orders of the Republic.

Genucius, a tribune of the plebeians, secured the enactment of a series of laws which both classes accepted, as the basis of a reconciliation. The Lucinian Laws, which were so long dormant under patrician officers, were enforced and officers punished for disregarding their provisions that both consuls could not be selected from the patrician order,

while both might be plebeian. A law was enacted to prevent the plebeians from holding office twice within ten years, or two offices within one year. In order to relieve the general distress, all outstanding debts were canceled, and the taking of interest on loaned money was prohibited.

After the victorious ending of the third Samnite war, Curius Dentatus, the conqueror of the Sabines, proposed a division of the Sabine lands among the poor in order to relieve the general distress. The patricians, as usual, bitterly opposed this measure, which caused the plebeians again to secede from Rome and establish themselves on Mount Janiculum. Even then the patricians refused to yield until a threatened foreign invasion obliged the Senate to grant the demands of the plebeians and appoint Hortensius, a plebeian, dictator, who convened the Roman people in a grove outside the city walls and proposed the famous Hortensian Laws, which were ratified by solemn oaths and by a vote of the entire assembly, 286 B. C. The new laws allotted the Sabine lands to the plebeians; reduced all outstanding debts; deprived the Senate of its veto and declared the Roman people assembled in the Comitia Tributa, to be the supreme legislative power in the Republic. This suspended for nearly a century the internal strife between the aristocracy and the democracy of Rome.

The three Punic wars between Rome and Carthage, commenced in 263 B. C., and continued with two intermissions until 146 B. C., leaving Rome mistress of the world, and Carthage in ashes; Syracuse pillaged of its great wealth and annexed to the

Roman provinces of Sicily; both sections of Gaul and the Spanish peninsula subdued; Britania, Macedonia and all of Greece, as well as Asia Minor and Africa, Roman provinces. It was a rich harvest of conquest. It gathered to Rome in one hundred and seventeen years the wealth of the world. It accumulated power and wealth in Rome, but not patriotism or civic virtue. It brought luxury and ease to a few, but only extreme poverty and suffering to the masses. It proved in the end to be a costly harvest to Republican Rome. She had scattered the winds of conquest among neighboring nations, to sweep down upon her own sons in destructive whirlwinds of discord and war.

During the Punic wars and those of conquest, the Licinian Laws requiring the employment of free labor by land owners and limiting the amount of land to a single proprietor were disregarded in both particulars. The public land had past into the hands of a small wealthy class, who preferred to have it cultivated by slaves. Thus the rich ruling class controlled the sources of wealth and resigned them only to persons of their own class, until Rome became a commonwealth of millionaires and beggars.

Absolute political equality existed between all citizens; all participated in public affairs; political distinctions were ended. Rome was a pure democracy, but in the hands of a wealthy and corrupt oligarchy. Plebeians who became wealthy identified themselves with the patricians, rather than with the class from which they had risen. The bonds of wealth united them with the aristocrats against the

poor. United, they establish a school of political corruption; voters expected to be bribed by money or gifts, or by distribution of corn at the cost of the magistrates. Is this not a cautionary lesson for patriotic Americans?

In 133 B. C., Tiberius Sempronius Gracchus, a son of Cornelia, daughter of the great Scipio Africanus, was elected Tribune. To correct existing evils he proposed to revive the neglected Licinian Laws and establish a commission of three to enforce them; to divide public land, which would become vacant by enforcement, among the poorer citizens; to compensate the landholders dispossessed for their improvements and losses by making them absolute owners of the legal amount of land allowed by the Licinian law, and making their titles inalienable. The Comitia Tributa passed the measures proposed by Gracchus and appointed Tiberius, his brother Caius, and his father-in-law Appius Claudius, to enforce them. Gracchus also proposed to shorten the term of military service, to deprive the senators of their exclusive right to act as civil jurymen and to confer the privileges of Roman Citizenship on the Italian allies of the Republic.

These measures so aroused the fury of the aristocrats that they resolved to defeat the re-election of Tiberius Gracchus at any cost. While the election was in progress, and Tiberius was addressing the people of Rome, the nobles armed with clubs attacked and killed Gracchus and three hundred of his followers. The enemies of Gracchus refused him an honorable burial and cast his body into the Tiber. The contest was immediately resumed by

Caius, the brother of Tiberius, and continued until 121 B. C., when he, too, perished at the hands of the nobles. The memory of the Gracchi was officially proscribed by their noble murderers, and Cornelia, their worthy mother, was not allowed to wear mourning for the loss of her two illustrious sons, but the people disregarding the cruel mandates of the government, honored the memory of the two brothers with statues; also offered sacrifices on the sacred ground where they had fallen. Cornelia lived to an old age and the Roman people honored her memory with a statue bearing the inscription, "Cornelia, mother of the Gracchi." With the fall of the Gracchi, ended the freedom of the Roman people. The tribunes of the people's rights, becoming rich themselves, concurred with the nobles in oppressing the people. The old Roman virtue was dead. The republic commenced to tumble and no human hands could save it. The senate had lost the patriotic spirit which braved the fury of the Gauls and successfully defeated such great generals as Pyrrhus and Hannibal; as much by their virtue as by their arms. The venality and corruption of the senate, that encouraged and abetted the murder of the Gracchi, were manifest in all its future conduct, until it culminated in the cowardly assassination of the mighty Caesar, in the senate chamber, on the Ides of March, 44 B. C.

The factions of Anthony and Octavius, and of Brutus and Caius, contended for two years longer for mastery of corrupt Rome. Their armies met at Philippi, in Macedonia, where they fought two battles in which both Brutus and Caius were defeated,

and died by their own hands. The hopes of Roman liberty expired with Brutus. The great Roman republic began and ended with a Brutus, lasting 466 years.

The empire erected on the ruins of the republic commenced 27 B. C., and continued in Rome until 476 A. D., when destroyed by the Turks. Before the civil wars commenced between the factions of Marius and Sulla, which undermined and ended the Republic, numerous tribes of the Cimbri, the Helveti, and the Teutons from the Swiss Alps and the Baltic regions, had invaded Italy and destroyed three Roman armies and compelled one to pass under their yoke before meeting defeat. They were a union of Gallic-Celts and Teutons and the forerunners of a power that took the Aryan torch of liberty and civilization from the degenerate, crime-palsied hands of the Greco-Romans, and still maintains it in Europe and America.

CHAPTER VI.

CELTS, TEUTONS AND SLAVS.

In the best works of civilization, since the dawn of history, the Aryan family has been the most conspicuous; and the dominating branches of that family have been the Celts, the Teutons and the Slavs. We are told by linguists that the evidence of language shows that the Celts were the first to migrate from their Bactrian home, in Asia and establish themselves in Central Europe, where they were in time followed by their Teutonic relatives who prest them continually westward. While in Central Europe the Celts separated into two great branches, the Pelasgic and the Gallic. The Pelasgians moved to the Southern peninsula of Europe where they developpt the Greco-Roman civilization, art and literature which have illuminated the world. The Gallic-Celts took possession of Gaul, Spain, Northern Italy and the British Islands, where after many tribal wars, they united with the Teutons in saving the Greco-Roman civilization and establishing the modern states of Europe. The Teutons occupied Central and Eastern Europe and like the Celts were divided into great branches, the Goths, the Vandals, the Burgundians, the Franks, the Lombards, the Jutes, the Saxons, the Angles and the Scandinavians, or Normans and Danes. The Slavs being a pastoral people overspread the vast steppes of Eastern Europe beyond the Elbe. They, too, were divided into branches, the Servians, the

Bornians, the Croations, the Poles, the Bohemians and the Illyrians. Thus in early times, the Aryan races had possession of Europe, except the frozen, marshy regions of the extreme north, the country of the Laps and Fins. There were also scattered remnants of a Mongolian race, the Basques of Northern Spain and the Turanians who entered Eastern Europe during the dark ages. Of these, the Huns or Avars settled in the hills and vales of what is now Hungary. The Bulgarians, another branch, founded the White Bulgarian Kingdom on the Volga River and the Kingdom of the Black Bulgarians between the Carpathians and the Balkans. The Magyars, another Turanian branch, settled in the valley of the Theiss and the Middle Danube where they laid the foundation of Modern Hungary, after driving out the Avars and Bulgarians. The Ottoman Turks, the last of the Turanians to enter Europe, established their dominion over the ruins of the Eastern Roman or Greek Empire, where they lately contended with Modern Greece and the Balkan States for the privilege of remaining in Europe.

During the early days of the Roman Republic, the Gallic-Celts under Brennius, captured and destroyed the City of Rome, but before the fall of the Republic, all of Gaul and a part of Britain were subdued and held by Caesar. The only Gallic Celts unconquered by Caesar, or afterwards by his successors, were those of Ireland, Scotland and Wales. But after the union and amalgamation of the Gallic Celts with the Teutons, at the closing period of ancient history, their com-

bined forces commenct the migration south and west which overthrew the Western Roman Empire of the Caesars and occupied its provinces.

After the fall of the Western Roman Empire, there was a further amalgamation of both branches of the Celts with numerous branches of the Teutons, from which has grown modern society, with its love of liberty and justice, of morality and religion, of law and order, and a recognition of the voice of the people as the voice of God.

At the fall of the Western Roman Empire, the Teutonic Tribes had scattered themselves thruout Gaul, Spain, Italy, Greece and Africa. The Visigothic Kingdom of Ruric, controlled all of Spain and part of Gaul South of the Loire and west of the Rhone. Arles, his capitol, was considered the center of western civilization. The Heruli tribes under Odoacer, who put an end to the Western Empire, held Italy, but were soon conquered by the Ostrogoths who occupied the region between the Danube and the Adriatic. The Gepidae, also Goths, held the region of Modern Roumania and Eastern Hungary. The Vandals besides their original homes south and east of the Baltic, were now masters of Northern Africa, with Corsica, Sardinia, and the Balearic Isles. The Burgundians occupied the valley of the Rhone and the country about the Swiss Lakes, the region called Burgundy. The Lombards held the region between the Danube and the Vistula, but later migrated to Northern Italy, to a region since known as Lombardy. The Alemanni held Southern Germany with Alsace and Northern Switzerland. The Turingians settled between the

headwaters of the Danube and the Elbe. The Franks, who originally occupied Belgium and the lower Rhine region, overran Gaul, expelled the Visigoths from the south and conquered the Burgundians in the southeast and gave to the country the name of France. The Modern French are descendants of the Romanized Celts of Gaul and their Frankish conquerors. The Sachs, Angles and Jutes overspread much of Northern Germany from the Rhine to the Baltic. The Scandinavians occupied the country now known as Norway, Sweden and Denmark, under the names of Normans and Danes. They were sea rovers and pirates and ravaged Germany, France, England and Ireland, and even terrorized the Eastern Roman Empire and spread alarm to the gates of Constantinople, which they placed under tribute.

In the ninth century, 867 A. D., Ruruk, Sinaf and Truvor, three Norman brothers of the Tribe of Russ, founded the Russian Empire under Scandinavian laws, with Novgorod as its capital. Sinaf and Truvor died childless but Ruruk's descendants in 911, placed Constantinople under tribute. In 980 A. D. Vladimar, the great pagan, also a descendant, had six wives and eight hundred concubines, still no woman was safe from his violence until he was converted by the Greek Christians in 988 A. D.

In 66 B. C. Caesar first invaded Britain with eighty vessels and twelve thousand men, but met with such a brave resistance from its Celtic inhabitants, after three fierce battles, one of which he lost, withdrew, but returned the next year

with eight hundred vessels and thirty thousand men. The Celts under Caswallon still bravely defended their country in several minor battles and three severe ones at or near Canterbury, in Kent; Chestney in Surrey, and near St. Albans in Herfordshire. Tho Caswallon and his men fought like lions, they were generally worsted because of the jealousy of his chiefs, instigated by the venal agents of Caesar, which caused Caswallon to offer terms of peace which were gladly accepted, by which Caesar was allowed to withdraw with all his remaining ships and men.

Nearly a hundred years of peace followed, during which the Celts of Britain improved their towns, roads and mode of life. They traveled and learned the ways of civilization from contact with the Romanized Celts of Gaul. At last the Roman Emperor Claudius sent a skilful general with a mighty force to subdue the Britons and soon came to the island himself, but made little headway. He then sent another skilful general, Ustorius Scapula. Some of the Celtic Chiefs of Tribes submitted, but others under the lead of Caradoc resolved to fight to death. Before joining battle with the forces of Scapula in the mountains of North Wales, Caradoc addressing his soldiers said: "This day decides the fate of Britain—your liberty or your eternal slavery dates from this hour. Remember your brave ancestors who drove the great Caesar across the sea." On hearing these words his brave men, shouting, rusht upon the Romans, but neither their numbers nor their weapons were sufficient to resist the swords and armor of the Roman Legions

in close conflict. The Celts lost the day. The wife and daughter of the brave Caradoc were taken prisoners, his brothers delivered themselves up while he himself was betrayed into the hands of the Romans by his base stepmother. He and all his family were taken to Rome to grace a triumph, where he showed that the brave spirit displayed in his battle grew great in his misfortune and still greater in his prison and more sublime in chains, before the Roman multitude who thronged the streets to see him. His dignified endurance in distress, won from the Romans, the freedom of himself and family, but there is no record that they were ever allowed to return to their native island. But the records do show that the Celts remaining on the island refused to yield to the Legions of Rome, but rose again and again and died by thousands with sword in hand fighting for liberty and homes.

In A. D. 61 Suetonius, the Roman general, stormed the island of Mona, the sacred retreat of the Druids, then a religious order of both Celt and Teuton, and burned the Druids in wicker cages by their own fires. While the Romans were storming and burning the Druids on the island of Mona, to frighten the Celts into submission on the mainland, the valiant Boadicea, Queen of the Iceni-Celts, and widow of Prasutagus of the Norfolk and Suffolk tribes, who had been plundered of her property by the Roman settlers in Britain, and who had been herself scourged with rods by order of Catus, a Roman officer, and her two daughters outraged in her presence, and the relatives of her late husband made slaves; to avenge these great

outrages, the Celts rose with all their might and drove Catus into Gaul, burned London, slew seventy thousand Romans in a few days and laid waste their possessions on the island. Both Suetonius and Boadicea strengthened their armies for a desperate battle; both sides advanced to strong positions. Before the Celts charged Boadicea, in a war-chariot with her fair hair streaming in the wind and her injured daughters lying at her feet, drove among her troops and cried to them for vengeance on their licentious oppressors. The Celts fought to the last in a terrible battle in which they lost eighty thousand on the field. To escape capture, their great Queen committed suicide by poison.

Still the fighting spirit of the Celt was unbroken. When Suetonius left the island they fell upon his troops and retook the island of Mona, but about twenty years afterwards, Agricola came and took it again and with new legions devoted seven years to subduing the country, especially the part called Scotland, but the Caledonians resisted him at every point and over every inch of the ground. They fought the bloodiest battles with him, they killed their wives and children to prevent them from being made prisoners. Hadrian came thirty years afterwards and still they resisted him. Severus came nearly a hundred years after Hadrian and they worried his great legions like dogs and slew them by thousands in the bogs and swamps. After Severus, came his son Caracalla, not to conquer with arms, but to compromise, he yielded in 208 A. D. a district of land to the Caledonians and the same privileges to other Celts as the Romans

possest in Britain. After which there was peace for seventy years when it was disturbed by a new enemy, the Jutes, who as pirates, plundered the coast of Gaul and Britain and repeated their ravages for several generations.

In the Fourth Century of the Christian era, a tribe of Celts, called Scots crost over from their original home in Ireland to Caledonia, in North Britain, and after reducing the native Caledonians under their supremacy called their new home Scotland and the natives Picts, and establisht themselves permanently near what is now called Argyleshire. After this the great Roman wall erected by Adrian, Severus and Agricola to protect their settlements in Southern Britain, proved no barrier against the Scots and Picts who swarmed over them into the Roman possessions and laid their fields in waste. In 368 A. D. the Scots and Picts of Caledonia penetrated as far south as London, but were driven back by Theodosius. They made another inroad in 396, but were beaten back by Stilicho; still another in 418 to be driven back by Honorius, who then withdrew from Britain with his legions, in despair leaving behind him the Celtic-Scots, Picts and Cambrians unsubdued and as defiant as they were when they aided in beating back the great Caesar five hundred years before. He also left at the mercy of the brave people whom the power of Rome could not subdue, the cowardly mixed Britons, descendants of the Roman Legions and camp followers and of the subdued Celts, a degenerated amalgam too cowardly to defend themselves.

After the withdrawal of the Romans, Vortigern,

a prince of the Celtic Stock, desired to restore to the Britons the old Celtic customs which prevailed before the Roman conquest, but a Roman party under Ambrosius opposed the movement in favor of the customs derived from Rome, and having prevailed over the party of Vortigern, he made the following piteous appeal to the Romans in Gaul for aid: "To Aetius, thrice Consul, the groans of the Britons, the barbarians drive us into the sea; the sea throws us back upon the barbarians; and we have the hard choice of perishing by the sword or by the waves."

But the Romans could render the degenerate Britons no aid, because of the inroads on Gaul by Attila, the Hun. The cowardly appeal of the Britons to Rome is one of the sad things frequently met with in history and shows how the descendants of a brave race may become degenerates by tamely submitting to the dominion of foreign masters. Their next appeal was made to a band of pirates under Hengist and Horsa, brothers and members of the Jute tribe of Saxons, which proved to be their undoing. The Jutes readily came simulating friendship, but as soon as the Scots and Picts were driven back to Caledonia, the perfidious Jutes turned their arms against the Britons and defeated them in many battles, in one of which Horsa, the Jutish leader was killed. Hengist then assumed the title of King of Kent in 457 A. D., thus founding the first Teutonic Kingdom in Britain, which should have given the conquered country the name of Juteland instead of England.

Having been forced by the Jutes and other Saxon

tribes to fight for their homes and firesides, the Britons gradually recovered the Celtic valor of their race and continued the struggle for a century and a half, from the coming of the Jutes in 448 A. D., to the last battle at Chester, in 607 A. D. where they were overpowered by numbers, defeated and nearly exterminated. The survivors were pursued by fire and sword into the mountains of Wales and Cornwall, or across the British Channel into France, where they gave their settlement the name of Brittany.

The Britons who sought new homes in the mountains of Wales, coming under the influence of such Celts as the celebrated "King Arthur and his Knights of the Round Table," were soon re-animated with the old Celtic fire of liberty and joined with the Welsh in an unbroken war of six hundred years against the descendants of the perfidious Saxons and also against those of their successors, the equally perfidious Franco-Normans, until they were duped into submission by a trick of King Edward, unworthy of any other than a descendant of a bastard.

When Edward I. returned from the Crusades his first great object was to unite under one sovereign England, Scotland and Wales; the latter two having kings of their own, resisted. Llewellyn was then Prince of Wales, and engaged to marry Eleanor de Montford who was on her way from France, but taken by an English ship and detained by Edward in England in order to create a quarrel with Wales. Edward went with a fleet to the coast of Wales, where he surrounded Llewellyn, starved

him in the mountains of Snowdon into a treaty of peace. Edward consented to the marriage and thot Wales subdued, but he had yet to deal with the Welsh people, who were naturally a gentle, quiet and pleasant people, delighting to receive and entertain strangers in their mountain cottages and play for them on their harps and sing their native songs to them; but withal a people of great spirit when aroused by an injury. The submission of Prince Llewellyn to Edward caused Englismen in Wales to assume the air of masters, which Welsh pride could not bear and they rose as one man. Edward returned with a large army, was beaten in two battlës where he lost thousands of his men driven into the sea, but in the end surprised and killed Llewellyn, had his head cut off and sent to London where it was fixed on the tower. His brother, David, held out against the English for six months longer, but was captured, hanged, drawn and quartered, which left Wales without a prince. Edward had an act of Parliament past annexing Wales to England, but when he came to appointing a Prince of Wales, the Welsh refused to accept his prince unless he was a native of Wales. Edward seeing that the Welsh were in earnest in their demands for a native prince and being anxious for peace, which would enable him to distribute Welsh estates among his English friends, bethot of a fraud to satisfy the Welsh. His wife Eleanor was soon to be a mother. He removed her to Caernarvan Castle in Wales, where she gave birth to a son. He then summoned the chief men of Wales to meet him at Ruthin Castle in Wales where he told them

he was then prepared to give them a prince who was a native of Wales, who could not speak a word of English and whose life none could stain. He then made his infant son, Prince of Wales, who has been succeeded by the first born of the Anglo-Norman sovereigns to the present time. Thus we see that it was not by force, but by fraud and trickery of the lowest nature that the Welsh submitted after the Romans, the Saxons, the Jutes, the Danes and the Normans had failed to conquer them in a thousand years. Tho the Welsh had always fought against odds they could neither be conquered nor driven from their rugged mountain homes, nor made to submit to a foreign yoke. Tho Edward I. trickt them into political submission to England, they remained mentally free by using the language of their Celtic fathers which they still use and cherish.

Edward I also failed in his purpose to subjugate and annex Scotland to England. His Norman line disappeared in 1481 when Henry Tudor, a descendant of Llewellyn became king, and in 1603 when James VI, of Scotland, speaking in the broadest Scotch, was crowned as James I of England, thus uniting the three Celtic countries as Great Britain, after tens of thousands of English lives were lost on the battle fields in vain attempts to subdue the unconquerable Celts of Scotland and Wales, under their immortal leaders, Owen Tudor, William Wallace and Robert Bruce.

By the frequent payment of tribute to the Danes and Normans, the descendants of the Jute pirates held Britain for several centuries until Canute the

Dane, subdued them in 1017 A. D. to be in turn conquered in 1066 by William of Normandy, the bastard son of Robert the Devil of Norway, and a low Celtic woman, a daughter of a peasant tanner and very beautiful.

William the Conqueror, reduced his mixed Roman, Danish and Saxonized subjects to the condition of menials; attacht them to the soil as chattels, and with the land distributed them among his Franco-Norman lords as feudal property and made an official record of their degradation in his Domesday-Book and placed it in the archives of London.

The English historian, Hume, tells us that William the Conqueror and his followers, having totally subdued the natives, pusht the right of conquest to the utmost extremity against them; contumely was added to oppression. The natives were so universally reduced to a state of meanness and poverty that the English name became a term of reproach. It required several generations before one family of Saxon pedigree was raised to any position of honor. Nineteen years after the conquest, when the refugee Saxons, who had fled to Denmark, attempted to organize an army to invade England, William brought a larger army of Franco-Normans and Britons and quartered them in the country. The next year the general survey and Domesday-Book were finisht, which completed the degradation of the Anglo-Saxons, who from that year cowardly submitted, and for more than five hundred years occupied the most debast position as vassals and villains under their Norman masters

ever held by any other branch of the white race. They were recognized as white persons destitute of every moral and honorable principles. Their servitude produced a moral debasement and turpitude in the victims of the system. Their cowardice earned for their memory an oblivion that fiction cannot now remove."

CHAPTER VII.

HUNS, AVARS AND TURKS

The Huns were a fierce, uncivilized race from Central Asia, but north of the primitive home of the Aryan family. They were much coarser and less refined than the Aryans. Their fathers were said to have been masters of the vast country between the River Irtysh and the Altai mountains, the great wall of China and Mantchoo Tartary; and are described in history as Mongols, Turks and Oigvars. They past their lives in war and hunting, leaving the cultivation of their fields to their women and slaves. They built neither cities nor houses as they considered it unsafe to be under a roof and regarded a place surrounded by walls as a sepulcher.

In 378 A. D., they entered Europe, along the Northern shores of the Black Sea, and spread over the vast steppes between the Volga and the Don rivers, covering a territory now embraced within Southwestern Russia, Poland and Eastern Russia, and extending over various cognate tribes of which the two most important were the Ostrogoths and the Visigoths. After being joined by the Alans and other tribes that they had conquered, the Hun cavalry crost the Don and swept like a devouring tempest over the rich, cultivated fields of the Ostrogoths, whose armies they defeated, causing the Gothic nation, to abandon their country and retire beyond the Borysthenes rivers. The Huns ruthlessly slaughtered all who remained, including

the women and children. They next crost the Danaster and defeated the Visigoths. After a disastrous defeat, Athanaric, the Gothic king, fortified a portion of his country extending a wall between the Hierassus and the Danube and abandoned the remainder to the Huns.

The Goths who so fiercely withstood the legions of Rome, now in despair, implored the Eastern Emperor, Valens, to be allowed to occupy the waste land of Moesia and Thrace, as Roman subjects. Valens granted their request on condition that they surrender their arms, but most of the Goths retained them by bribing the corrupt commissioners sent to disarm them, as they deemed their arms necessary to obtain more valuable lands than those taken by the Huns.

The Goths at this time, had been thoroly converted to Arian Christianity, by their celebrated bishop, Ulfilas, the inventor of the Gothic alphabet. The officers appointed by Valens to supervise the settlement of the Goths, were the most profligate extortioners of his corrupt court. Instead of supplying the new Roman subjects with provisions until their new lands would yield a harvest, as had been promist, the officials closed the magazines and enrich themselves by charging exhorbitant prices for the worst and most revolting food. Lupicinus, the leader of the corrupt officials finally attempted to murder Fritigern and other Gothic chiefs at a banquet to which they were invited for this purpose, at Marcianopolis. But the Gothic chiefs were informed of the plot in time to escape, whereupon their followers massacred the larger portion of the Ro-

man Legions in revenge for the breach of hospitality. This aggravated the old antipathy of the Goths to the Romans, also intensified the animosity of the Arian and orthodox sects toward each other, greater than that which existed between the Christians and the Pagans.

The advancing Huns obliged the Ostrogoths to cross the Danube and unite with the Visigoths, just before the war with the Romans commenct. Thus strengthened, Fritigarn desolated Thrace, Macedonia and Thessaly; even the suburbs near the walls of Constantinople. Gratian, Emperor of the West, tho harast by war with the Germans, marcht to the aid of Valens, but being delayed by sickness, did not reach Valens until after the audacity of Fritigern had drawn him into an engagement at Adrianople, in which Valens was disastrously defeated, with himself and two thirds of his legions including thirty-five Tribunes and commanders of cohorts, dead on the field, in 378 A. D.

Gratian commenct his reign by punishing the ministers and senators who had been guilty of extortion. He enacted laws favoring the church and ordained that all controversies concerning religion should be decided by the bishops and synod of the provinces in which they occurred; that the clergy should be free of personal charges; and that all places where heterodox doctrines were taught should be confiscated. Being unable to retrieve the disaster in the east without a colleague, he appointed Theodosius, as successor to Valens in the government of the eastern provinces. Maximus, the governor of Britain, revolted; his legions proclaimed him Em-

peror and he crost over from Britain to Gaul and put Gratian to death at Paris, in 383 A. D. He was himself, five years afterwards, executed as a traitor by Theodosius, who in 394, became the sole sovereign of the whole Roman Empire. His first efforts were applied to bringing the powerful Visigothic nation, who had reduced his part of the empire to the verge of ruin, into submission, converting them into useful subjects and turning their arms against his other enemies, in which, for a time he was successful by settling large colonies of Visigoths in Thrace, and of Ostrogoths in Asia Minor, and by enlisting forty thousands of their best warriors into the Roman legions. To please the Christian Goths. Theodosius issued an edict positively forbidding any and all Pagan ceremonies, on penalty of death, and closed all the heathen temples and confiscated their adornments. He also enacted severe laws against the Arian and other heretical Christian sects, whom the Council of Nice in 325 A. D. and the Council of Constantinople in 381 A. D. had condemned. The heterodox Christians were forct to surrender their churches and to vacate their sees and were forbidden to preach or ordain ministers, or assemble for public worship. All their property was confiscated and given to the orthodox. The penalties attached to these laws were fines and exiles. Theodosius died at Milan in 395 A. D. after appointing his elder son, Areadius, Emperor of the east and his younger son, Honorius, Emperor of the West. Theodosius was the last emperor who reigned over the whole Roman dominions which afterwards remained divided as the Eastern or Greek Empire

and the Western or Latin Empire. The Eastern Empire lasted over a thousand years, when it fell before the arms of the Ottoman Turks, while the Western Empire continued only a little more than three quarters of a century, when it deservedly fell before the attacks of the Huns; the Scourge of God, under Alaric; the Sueves, Vandals, Alans and the Burgundians under Radagaisus.

The dominion of the Huns, after subduing the Scythian and German tribes, extended from the Baltic on the north, to the Euxine on the south, and from the Volga on the east, to the Rhine on the west. Attila's army of seven hundred thousand men was officered by a multitude of vassal kings. For nine years they ravaged the territory of the Eastern Empire to the very walls of Constantinople and retired only on the promise of an enormous annual tribute and the immediate payment of six thousand pounds of gold.

In 451 A. D. Attila invaded Gaul in behalf of a Frankish king who solicited his assistance, but Theodoric, King of the Visigoths, entered into an alliance with Rome. The united armies came up with the Huns just as they had taken Orleans. Attila retreated across the Seine to Chalons, where his Scythian cavalry could operate to better advantage and where the sanguinary battle of Chalons was fought, the most memorable battle in the history of the world, in which Attila was defeated by the Visigoths and Romans under Aetius and one hundred and sixty-two thousand of the Hunic army slain. Attila then retreated beyond the Rhine into Germany in 451 A. D. The battle of

Chalons was the last victory won in the name of the Western Roman Empire. Had the Huns triumpht, the civilization of Europe would have perisht as the Huns were savage, heathen and destructive; mighty in the work of devastation and desolation; but never, in the midst of their greatest power and wealth, made any effort to build or organize a state.

In 452 A. D. the Huns invaded Northern Italy and desolated the country reducing Aquileia, Altinum, Concordia, and Padua to ashes, and pillaged Pavia and Milan. Here an embassy, headed by Pope Leo the Great, solemnly interceded with Attila for the safety of Rome. The appeal of the Pope aroused the superstitious fears of Attila, who thereupon made peace with the Emperor, Valentinian III, and retired into Pannonia, where he died from bursting of a blood vessel. His empire at once fell to pieces; the Ostrogoths, the Gepidae and the Longobards, gaining their independence after a severe struggle; while the remnants of the nomadic Huns found their way back to the rich, pastoral steppes of Central Asia. The death of Attila and civil wars among his followers, delayed the fall of the Western Roman Empire; while the assassination of his conqueror, the valiant Aetius, by the ungrateful Valentinian III, deprived the empire of its last great general, and the ravages of the barbarians could no longer be checkt.

In 403 A. D. the Goths under Alaric, first entered Italy, but their withdrawal was purchast by Honorius paying a heavy ransom. On the approach of the Goths, the timid Honorius, had fled Rome

and established himself at Milan. After the Goths had retired, Honorius returned to Rome and was honored by a triumph. While the people were wildly rejoicing amidst the usual cruel sports in the amphitheatre, Telemachus, a Christian monk, sprang into the arena and raising the cross over his head ordered the gladiators in the name of the crucified Redeemer to cease their brutal sport. The enraged multitude stoned the monk to death and in remorse for their crime declared him a martyr. The incident caused Honorius to prohibit human combats in the amphitheatre thereafter.

Honorius, still fearing the barbarians (an epithet applied by the Romans to all peoples but themselves, blind to their own barbarous sports for which the monk was put to death and declared a martyr), removed his capital to Ravenna on the approach of the Sueves, Vandals, Alans and Burgundians under Radagaisus, threatening Italy with desolation. While laying siege to Florence, the great hosts of Radagaisus, suffering greatly for provisions, caused himself and about one third of his force to surrender; Radagaisus was put to death and his men sold as slaves. But about two thirds of his forces escaped and fell back upon Gaul, which they laid waste from the Rhine to the Pyrenees.

Now Honorius outdid the worst of the barbarians. He ordered a massacre of all the so-called barbarian families in Italy. The horrible order was cruelly executed, causing thirty thousand Gothic soldiers in the pay of Rome to revolt and invite Alaric to Italy, to avenge the slaughter of their wives and children.

Alaric answering the call of his outraged countrymen marcht upon Rome and laid siege to the city, in 408 A. D. At first Alaric demanded all the gold and silver in the city; all the rich and precious movables and all the slaves of barbarian origin. A Roman ambassador asked: "If such, O King! are your terms, what do you intend to leave us? His reply was: "Your lives." Alaric modified the severe terms, raised the siege and retired from Rome with a large ransom of gold and silver and valuable merchandise; then entered Tuscany where he was joined by forty thousand Goths and Germans who had obtained their freedom by his victories. The Emperor Honorius having refused to ratify the treaty concluded between the Gothic chief and the Roman Senate, Alaric led his army back to Rome, took possession of Ostia, where the magazines for corn and other supplies were located, which deprived the citizens of subsistence; then demanded their surrender, to which their desperate straits forct them to comply.

Alaric elevated Attalus to the imperial diginity, but soon deposed him and resumed his negotiations with Honorius at Ravenna. Again the Emperor refused to treat, causing Alaric for the third time to march on Rome, which he entered in 410 A. D. and gave it up to plunder, but the Goths being profest Christians, spared the churches. After Rome suffered six days by the fury of the conquerors, the Goths marcht into Southern Italy, where Alaric died. His body was buried in the bed of a small stream near Consentia. The captives who prepared his grave were murdered, so

that the Romans might never find his sepulcher.

Alaric was succeeded as King of the Goths by his brother-in-law, Adolphus, who ravaged Southern Italy for two years, after which he made peace with the Emperor Honorius, in 412 A. D., and married Placidia, the Emperor's sister and led the Visigoths thru Gaul into Spain, which had been overrun by the Alans, Sueves and Vandals, in 409 A. D. The Visigoths drove the Sueves into the Northwestern part of the Spanish peninsula; the Alans into the Southwestern part and the Vandals into the Southern part; thus founding the Kingdom of the Visigoths in Spain and Southern Gaul; while the Franks established themselves in Gaul north of the Seine; and the Burgundians in the province east of the Rhone, since called Burgundy.

In 425 A. D. Valentinian III, was proclaimed Emperor of the West, under the regency of his mother, Placidia, who governed the Western Empire for twenty five years. Aetius and Boniface were her great generals and both bitter enemies and jealous of each other. Aetius induced Placidia to recall Boniface from the government of Africa. Boniface had been a most faithful friend of the imperial family, but now being deceived by the crafty Aetius, refused to relinquish his government, and in revenge invited to his aid, Genseric, King of the Vandals, who immediately crossed over from Spain into Africa. Boniface soon regretted his hasty action and when too late, tried to check the advance of the Vandals. Tho receiving the aid of auxiliaries from the Eastern Empire, the combined forces of the two Empires were irretrievably de-

feated. Boniface retired from Africa, taking with him to Italy, the Romans who were able to leave, leaving Genseric to found the Kingdom of the Vandals in Africa, in 429 A. D.

In 455 A. D., Valentinian III was assassinated by Maximus whose wife he had corrupted. Maximus then became Emperor of the West and after the death of his wife soon after compelled Eudoxia, the widow of Valentinian, to marry him. In revenge, Eudoxia invited Genseric, the Vandal King of Northern Africa, to invade Italy. Genseric with his followers, crossed the Mediterranean Sea, into Italy, and besieged Rome. A tumult arose in the city, in which Maximus was killed. Rome soon fell into the hands of the Vandals, who plundered the city of what the Goths had left, even despoiling the churches. After fourteen days and nights of pillage, the Vandals returned to Africa taking with them Eudoxia and the plunder of Rome, continuing afterwards to harass the coasts of Italy, Spain and Greece. In 467 A. D. the combined forces of the Roman Empires made a formidable attack upon the Vandals but failed and lost their entire Eastern fleet to Genseric, who recovered Sardinia and the possession of Sicily, which enabled the Vandals to ravage Italy more freely than before; Genseric, the Vandal King of Africa, inflicted a mortal wound on the power of Rome from which no political physician could save her. While the great Giantess of the West on her knees begging for mercy which she never gave to a fallen foe, Orestes, a Pannorian commander of her barbarian auxiliaries, inflicted the death blow by placing his own son, Romulus

Augustus, a mere youth, on the throne of the west. The barbarians then demanded a third of the land of Italy for themselves, and being refused, rose in arms and killed Drestes. Their chief, Odoacer, of the Heruli, a German Tribe, next dethroned the youthful Romulus and assumed the title of King of Italy for himself. This abolished the title and office of "Emperor of the West."

Avars and Turks.

The Avars and Turks, for unknown ages occupied the deserts bordering on Lake Baikal, in North-eastern Asia. Under a monarch named Tulun, they advanced their dominion southeastward to the Sea of Japan. Tulun then assumed the title of Kagan or Chagan, a name still used on the coins of the Sultan of Turkey. While weakened by civil wars among themselves, the Avars were assailed by rival tribes from the north, whom the Chinese called Thinkhin, known to Europeans as Turks; who completely overthrew the Avars and annihilated their power.

A new Mongolian tribe called Oigurs, after being defeated by the Turks, assumed the false title of Avars, because they found the name still formidable, and retained it because of the terror it inspired as they moved westward into Europe.

The Turks first appeared in history as slaves of the original Avars, while inhabiting the region of the Altai Mountains. Under the leadership of Thuman, the Turks asserted their independence and enslaved their former masters, and rapidly extended their dominion from the Volga to the Sea of Japan, thus placing themselves close to the frontiers of

In 579 A. D. Hormisdas became Emperor of the New Persian Empire. His tyranny led to a rebellion of his subjects. In the crisis, Persia was saved by a hero named Bahram, who defeated both the Turks and the Byzantines and who was proclaimed King of Persia by his triumphant troops. The Persian nobles then deposed Hormisdas IV; put out his eyes and elevated his son, Khosrou Parvis, to the Persian throne. Bahram refused to acknowledge Khosrou Parvis as king and reduced him to such desperate straits, that he fled to the Byzantine lines and threw himself upon the generosity of Emperor Maurice who espoused his cause. A Byzantine army entered Persia, drove out the usurper and placed Khosrou Parvis on the Persian throne. In gratitude for this service, Khosrou Parvis maintained the most friendly relations with the Eastern Roman Empire, until the death of Emperor Maurice, who gained substantial victories over the Avars in the latter part of his reign. In seeking to improve the discipline of his army, Maurice provoked a sedition which ended in elevating Phocas to the throne and the murder of himself and five sons at Chalcedon in 602 A. D. Phocas was an ignorant ruffian whose tyranny soon disgusted his subjects. Heraclius, the Exarch of Africa, threw off his allegiance to Phocas and sent his son, the younger Heraclius, to Constantinople with a strong fleet to seize the throne. After putting Phocas to death the younger Heraclius was proclaimed Emperor in 610 A. D.

Heraclius was obliged to defend his dominions against the Persian King, Khosrou Parvis, who under the plea of avenging the death of Maurice,

overran the whole of Syria, Egypt and Africa, as far west as Tripoli. He also took Antioch, Damascus, Jerusalem and other eastern cities of the Byzantine Empire by storm in 614 A. D. gave over Jerusalem to violence, burned the Holy Sepulcher and the stately churches erected by Constantine the Great, plundered the Holy City of its wealth and transported the Patriarch and the true cross to Persia. During these victories, the Persian King massacred ninety thousand Christians, marcht his army thru Asia Minor to the Bosphorus, took Chalcedon and maintained a camp within sight of Constantinople, for ten years.

During all this time, Heraclius, the Roman Emperor, remained in his capital enjoying its pleasures and seeming unconcerned about the fate of his dominions; but when everything seemed lost, he suddenly cast off his weakness and assumed a heroic spirit. When the Persians deemed their arms invincible and the glory of their ancestors, Cyrus the Great and Darius Hystapes, had been restored by the victorious Khosrou Parvis; Heraclius borrowed the consecrated wealth of the church under a solemn vow to restore it with usury; collected an army and a fleet, sailed to the Sicilian coast, and occupied Issus, where he was attackt by the Persians and gained a brilliant victory over them in 622 A. D.—on the very spot where Alexander the Great defeated Darius Codomannus nearly a thousand years before.

Heraclius next advanct into the heart of the New Persian Empire, which caused the Persians to withdraw from the Nile and the Bosphorus to defend

and all of Northern Africa, was now reduced to a part of Southern Europe, south of the Balkan Mountains, including only Thrace, Macedonia, Greece and Illyricum, along the western and part of the northern coast of Asia Minor.

The causes which produced the decline and fall of Imperial Rome, were the internal social ulcers which had been eating into her vitality for centuries. They were nourisht by the spoils of war, the blood of fallen nations and the groans of dying gladiators; by official and private assassinations; by the defiant geers of wealth and the timid frowns of poverty; by impiety, luxury and sensuality; by debauching and mystifying the simple teachings of Zoroaster and of Christ; all tending to destroy the republican spirit of liberty, equality and justice, shown by the founders of the Roman Republic. It was the decline of the old patriotism, military virtue and national sentiment, and not the Goths, nor the Huns, nor the Vandals who caused the decline and fall of the empire of the west. The savage Huns retired to their nomadic fields in Central Asia; the Goths and the Vandals mingled and amalgamated with the Pelasgic Celts of Greece and Rome, and with those of Gaul and Britain and became the progenitors of the people who now dominate the nations of Europe and America.

CHAPTER VIII.

FROM PAGANISM TO CHRISTIANITY.

The fabled stories about the early inhabitants of the Celtic Islands (now British), like the mystic accounts of the Creation, the Garden of Eden, the Ark, the Tower of Babel and the Olympic Gods, have gems of truth and fiction interwoven with poetic and romantic legends to please primitive man; but the Supreme Spiritual God, the Author and Creator of all things, endowed man with an inquiring and penetrating mind to seek for truth among the rocks and sands of Time, and even among the Stars to the very gates of Heaven; placing nothing too low nor too high to hide its secrets from him.

We have seen that in the morning twilight of authentic history, the peat that rests on the foundation stones of the abandoned pagan altars of Ireland, was forced by science to reveal to man that more than 9600 years have past into eternity since the stones on which it rests were put in place; thus leaving a very broad human field of existence to be accounted for before the Mosaic dates in Genesis. We cheerfully leave those distant fields to be explored by the experts of mythology and drop down ourselves over the hills and vales of Time to present ages.

Celts Everywhere in Europe.

The modern Irish scholar, John Hurley, says:

"There is very little difference in origin between the warring nations now engaged in a death struggle

their Persian Dominions at home. The Persian King incited the Avars to attack Constantinople, but they were defeated with frightful slaughter in 626 A. D. and in the following year Heraclius in a decisive battle, defeated the Persians on the site of the buried City of Ninevah; when, for the first time, the Assyrian cities and palaces were opened to the Byzantine Empire. Tho thoroly defeated, the Persian King refused to solicit peace, but being an old man Khosrou Parvis, in 628 A. D., desired to secure his crown for his favorite son, Mersaza, but another son, Sirves, put his father into a dungeon and killed eighteen of his brothers in the presence of his father who lived only five days. Sirves enjoyed the fruits of his unnatural crimes for only eight months. For four years, nine pretenders for the crown, plunged the country into anarchy and bloodshed. After a miserable existence of eight years more, the New Persian Empire fell, an easy prey to the Saracens, who next turned their victorious arms against the Byzantine Empire, which they overran, taking Syria, Palestine and the Eastern Provinces, never to be returned to the Greek Empire.

The contest with the Persians, exhausted the resources of Heraclius and demands of the clergy for the return of the church funds with the usury promist by Heraclius, required all the public funds leaving the Empire helpless to successfully resist a new and vigorous foe like the Saracens.

After the death of Heraclius in 641 A. D., the Empire went from bad to worse under the emperors who generally obtained their reigns by poison or

the dagger; by murders growing out illicit loves; low vices and general immorality and corruption in office. Depravity had complete command of the decaying Empire of the Great Constantine.

During the reign of Constantine IV, the Saracens conquered most of Western Asia and in 668 A. D. laid siege to Constantinople, which siege lasted for seven years, when the assailants were driven off by the use of the newly discovered Greek Fire, not understood by the Saracens.

In 878 A. D., the Saracens captured Syracuse and Sicily, which established them firmly in Southern Italy, and in 886 A. D. they captured Thessalonica. In 976 A. D. the Byzantine Empire recovered some of its former military strength under Basil II, who waged a vigorous war against the Bulgarians and Slavonian Tribes of the Balkan peninsula for nearly forty years, thoroly subduing the Bulgarians, but he tarnished his reputation by cruelly putting out the eyes of fifteen thousand of his prisoners, whom he sent back to the king, who died of grief and rage at the sight. Basil died in 1025 A. D., amid the blessings of the clergy and the curses of the people.

In 1071 A. D., the Seljuk Turks who had become Mohammedans became masters of the Saracen dominions in Asia and began attacks upon the Roman provinces; captured the Emperor, whom they releast upon the promise of a heavy ransom, and an annual tribute. In 1195 A. D. the mighty empire of Constantine, extending from the Alps and the Danube, to the Euphrates and the Great African Desert embracing Italy and all of Europe south of the Danube, Asia Minor, Syria, Palestine, Egypt

and all of Northern Africa, was now reduced to a part of Southern Europe, south of the Balkan Mountains, including only Thrace, Macedonia, Greece and Illyricum, along the western and part of the northern coast of Asia Minor.

The causes which produced the decline and fall of Imperial Rome, were the internal social ulcers which had been eating into her vitality for centuries. They were nourished by the spoils of war, the blood of fallen nations and the groans of dying gladiators; by official and private assassinations; by the defiant geers of wealth and the timid frowns of poverty; by impiety, luxury and sensuality; by debauching and mystifying the simple teachings of Zoroaster and of Christ; all tending to destroy the republican spirit of liberty, equality and justice, shown by the founders of the Roman Republic. It was the decline of the old patriotism, military virtue and national sentiment, and not the Goths, nor the Huns, nor the Vandals who caused the decline and fall of the empire of the west. The savage Huns retired to their nomadic fields in Central Asia; the Goths and the Vandals mingled and amalgamated with the Pelasgic Celts of Greece and Rome, and with those of Gaul and Britain and became the progenitors of the people who now dominate the nations of Europe and America.

CHAPTER VIII.

FROM PAGANISM TO CHRISTIANITY.

The fabled stories about the early inhabitants of the Celtic Islands (now British), like the mystic accounts of the Creation, the Garden of Eden, the Ark, the Tower of Babel and the Olympic Gods, have gems of truth and fiction interwoven with poetic and romantic legends to please primitive man; but the Supreme Spiritual God, the Author and Creator of all things, endowed man with an inquiring and penetrating mind to seek for truth among the rocks and sands of Time, and even among the Stars to the very gates of Heaven; placing nothing too low nor too high to hide its secrets from him.

We have seen that in the morning twilight of authentic history, the peat that rests on the foundation stones of the abandoned pagan altars of Ireland, was forced by science to reveal to man that more than 9600 years have past into eternity since the stones on which it rests were put in place; thus leaving a very broad human field of existence to be accounted for before the Mosaic dates in Genesis. We cheerfully leave those distant fields to be explored by the experts of mythology and drop down ourselves over the hills and vales of Time to present ages.

Celts Everywhere in Europe.

The modern Irish scholar, John Hurley, says:

"There is very little difference in origin between the warring nations now engaged in a death struggle

in Europe; they all spoke dialects of a common tongue, which was broken up or corrupted by the Greeks and Romans.

"There were twenty-two nations of the Gauls at one time who spoke Gaelic. The Germans spoke it in the time of Marus, and they wore plaids, like the Scots, in the time of Hannibal (Anna-Bael, of the Lord). Cambrian and Gaelic were spoken in Britain for over 3,000 years, and generally down to the eighth century. Germans, Gauls and Romans sometimes used the same Gaelic war cries. The Franks were called, in Gaelic, Fri-Alpa-n-d'esin, hence Frinde, or French, Frincastan, Hessian, Helvetians, Albanians, etc. They were all Cinomania, who occupied Allemānia, Maine in Gaul, the Po, Verona, Cis and Trans-Alpine Gaul, and they became subjects of Rome about 222 A. D. Their ancient language had several different names, as Celtic, Erse, Scuthbearia or Scottish, Gaelic, Bearla Feina or Phoenician language, also used by the Tyrians, Carthagenians and Scythians. Russia was called Scythia, Persia was called Far-said-stan, Farsaidh or Persia, and the city of Said, Sidon, (Saidun). All those names, and many more, are derived from Fenus-Far-Saidh, the founder of Phoenicia.

"There were three great empires of the Celts before Rome was founded, and all the place-names of Europe were in their language, but were greatly changed by the Romans, as follows: Lugh-Dunum, now London; Roim, now Rome; Beal-amham (river mouth), now Boulogne; Cathirdidhe, now Cardiff; Cathirna-Aithne, now city of Athens; Cor-dubha,

then Cordova, and Dover; and Far-isci Parisci (water men), now Paris. The Chamavi occupied Chambomig, now Hamburg; Reghis-brnig, now Ratisbon; M-di-olan (wool center) now Milan; Creamhona (garlic), now Cremona; Au-Relan-us, now Orleans; Aechen, now Aix; and Aix-la-Chapelle; Argent-orat, a famous temple of the Celts, now Strasburg; Airchenn, now Arquennes in Hainault. Feintreab is now Winthrop in Norfolk; Licht-fuilt is now Litchfield in Stafford; Fenta Bulgaran, Caer-Belgai, or Ventacaistro is now Winchester.

"Rheims was built on the site of Doro-cortorum, or Civitas Remorum of the Celtic tribe of Remi. Cala, Caladh, Calaidhs became Calais; Calafort Clippard; Bour-de-gala Bourges and Bordeaux; Tourin or Tourain, Turin; Maolitia or Meletia, now Malta; Cathir-Eadan or Dun-Edan is now Edinburgh; Caer Brittain or Dunbritton is now Dumbarton; Caer Ebroic is City of York; Celtinne is now Cetinge; Oirib, daughter of Agnor, King of Tyre, gave name to Europe; Aoife to Africa, also called Eve. Magh, in Latin Magos, a plain, hence Novis Magus, now Nyon in Oise, also Nigon in Vosges, An Nyons in Drome, Nemeque in Lombardy, Nimeque in Belgium, Nieu magen in Rhineland, Nemeque in Speyr, Palantinate, Uro-Magus, now Promasens in Rhineland, Druso-Magus, plain of Drusi, Broca Magus, or Brumath, vin Netherlands, Pagas-Pictavus now Poitou and Poitou and Poitiers.

Ireland probably gets its name from Er, a grandson of Noah. The Milesian poets were called Ced Barda h'Er, or the first poets of Ireland, hence Er-ia, country of Er. Iberia (Ib-Er-ia), country of the tribe

of Er, Celt-Ib-Er-ia and Er-ania (Irania) Isle of the Sun, meaning that the sun was worshipt there as the eye of the Lord. Eros means Sacred Isle because it was dedicated to God, called Bael, Bel, or Eli; Scythopulus was also called Beth-El, "House of Bael," and the Scythian Valley was the Irish Sea; Ireland was called Bael-Iris or Irish-Bhail (Inisfail) "Isle of the Lord," and Cu-na-Bel-Inis, heroes of the Isle of Bel. Egypt was anciently called Er-ia. Sunday (Sunlan-tag), was in Irish called Dia Suil or Dia Atidh, both meaning Eye of the Lord, and the Irish Gear (year) was called Bliadhain "flower time" meaning originally Bael-Aodh-Ainn; hence annual, anus, anulas, perennial, etc. Geol or Yule was the beginning of the circle of the Eye of the Lord, commencing with Geanibar (January), which means a gaining or lengthening of the days. La-Bel-tine means, day of the Lord's fire, celebrated May 1. On that night the Tine-cuave (bonfire) was lit. The Romans celebrated at Paletne Hill (Bael fire Hill). The Irish sunrise prayer was called Gadh Greine. Fionn Mac Cumhall's standard was called Deo Greina, bright sun, or sun-burst, Er's-dag was Tuesday. Er's-bruig is now Marsburg; Hannibal means "of the Lord" (an-na-Bael), all being evidences of the antiquity of the sunburst flag.

Mr. Joyce, in his history of Ireland, tells us that a Greek colony of 1,000 was led to Ireland in A. M. 2520 by Parthalon, with his wife and three sons, but being followed by the curse of a paracite, their descendants all perisht in a plague 300 years afterwards. And that in 2850 A. M. a Scythian colony came in 34 ships under Nemed and settled on Great

Island near Cork. Then came a race of Fomorian pirates and sea-robbers from Africa under two brothers, Morc and Tor-Conang, who settled on Tory Island off the coast of Donegal and constantly harast the Nemedians, tho generally defeated in battle until Nemed and 3,000 of his people perisht by plague in A. M. 3000. The Fomorians then increast their attacks which caused the Nemedians to rise in fury and destroy Tor-Conang and family, but Tor's brother, Morc, attackt the Nemedians in a desperate battle where nearly all the combatants fell. Only one crew of the Nemedians escapt, leaving Morc and his Fomorians masters of Tory Island. The defeated Nemedians fled from Ireland under three chiefs, Simon-Brec, Ibath and Britain-Mail. Simon-Brec led his followers to Greece where they became Firbolgs or bagmen, because they were forct by the Greeks as slaves to carry soil in leather wallets, from the low lands to fertilize the rocky and barren hillsides. They multiplied rapidly and not faring as well as their fathers did in Ireland, they fled under the lead of five sons of Dela and returned to Ireland in A. M. 3266 and divided the Island into five provinces, Ulster, Leinster, Connaught and the Two Munsters.

Joyce also tells us that Ibath too led his people to Greece in the vicinity of Athens, where their descendants became known as Dedannans, and that Britain-Mail led his followers to the north of Alban, now Scotland, where they became the progenitors of the early Brittons. That the few Nemedians who remained in Ireland suffered for more than two

hundred years the bitter tyranny of the Formorians.

The descendants of Ibath who settled near Athens learned magic from the Greeks and became more expert than their masters. When the Syrians invaded Greece the Dedannans using their necromancy, shielded the Greeks in battle and restored to life each evening those who fell in battle. The Syrians also had Druids who instructed them how to defeat the Dedannan spells, after which they slaughtered the Greeks without mercy. To escape the vengeance of the Syrians, the Dedannans fled north to Lochlan or Scandinavia, where they remained several years, teaching the arts and sciences to the Lochlans.

In A. M. 3303 the Dedannans under their great chief Nuada migrated to the north of Scotland where a branch of their race had settled under Britan-Mail in A. M., 3066, but sojourned there only seven years, then crost over to Ireland, taking with them some precious jewels and the wonderful coronation stone, Fia-Fail, which they set up at Tara where it remained more than a thousand years, when it was stolen by England.

When Nuada reacht Ireland he burned his ships, and in a great battle lasting four days, defeated the Firblogs; then some years afterwards defeated the Fomorians in a battle on the coast of Sligo in which all the Firbolg chiefs were slain. The Dedannans held the Island about two hundred years, when in A. M. 3500 they were conquered by Milesius, who came to Ireland with a fleet of thirty ships.

The Milesians, like the Nemedians, and the Dedannas, were originally from Scythia. They first

migrated to Egypt, where they were when Pharoah and his host were drowned in the Red Sea. Because the Milesians sympathized with Moses, they were driven from Egypt and found refuge in Crete for a time. After wandering thru Europe for many generations, they crost from Spain to Ireland, landing near the mouth of the River Slany.

At this time, Ireland was ruled by three Dedannan Kings, Mac-Coil, Mac-Kecht and Mac-Grena. While on their ships, the Milesians were driven out to sea by a furious storm, said to have been caused by the magical incantations of the Dedannans to destroy them. Five of the Milesians brothers were destroyed by the storm, but the surviving brothers, Eremon, Eber-Finn and Amergin landed the remnants of their people and in two great battles defeated the Dedannans and divided the island between themselves. The two Munsters were assigned to Eber-Finn, Leinster and Connaught to Eremon and Ulster to a nephew, Eber, son of Ir. Amergin, being a seer, was not given territory, but was made Chief Brehon and poet of Ireland. (Joyce).

The descendants of the Firbolgs, Dedannans and Fomorianians constituted the bulk of the Irish people at the opening of the Christian era. They were treated as plebeians by their Milesian conquerers, but finally revolted and took the sovereignty from their masters, exiling or destroying the Milesian princes, who returned before the end of the century under Tuathal and restored the Milesian dynasty.

From Eber-Finn in A. M., 3501, to Roderic

O'Connor, Ard-Ri, in A. D. 1166, except the dynasty of Cabery-Cumcat, Kings of the Milesian dynasty ruled Ireland. Then Braekspare, an Englishman, as Pope Adrian IV, sold their island to Henry II of England. The infamy of this sale will shortly appear; let it rest for the present.

Scythia was the original home of the Nemedians and the Milesians, as it was of the Greeks, Medes and Persians. All were of the great Aryan family of Europe whose branches, especially the Celts, Teutons and Slavs remained in constant contact.

As we have seen, when Britain-Mail, a Nemedian Chief in A. M. 3066, took his followers from Ireland, he went to the north of Alban, now Scotland. When I bath's followers, as Dadannans, returned from Greece in A. M. 3303 by way of Locklan or Scandinavia, they too, remained in the north of Scotland for seven years, then crost over to Ireland.

From the earliest time, the Irish of Ulster were in the habit of crossing over to Alban, or Scotland, where they settled colonies. Bede says: In course of time, Britain, besides the Britons and Picts received a third nation, the Scoti, who issued from Hibernia under the leadership of Reuda, secured for themselves either by friendship or by sword, settlements among the Picts which they still possess. From the name of their commander, they are to this day called Dalreudini, for in their language, Dal signifies a part. (Joyce).

During the first four centuries the Picts and Scots made constant war on the Roman legions and on the degenerate Brittons, whom they had subdued in the southeast of England. The Picts were descendants

of the Nemedians led to Scotland by Britan-Mail in A. M. 3073 and therefore a branch of the Gaels. The Scotch were a later branch of the Irish Gaels. (Joyce).

In those times, the Scots often went from Ireland on plundering excursions to the coast of Britain and Gaul and were as much dreaded as the Danes were in after ages. They conquered the Isle of Man and a large part of Wales, in the first century. The Hibernian Scots were the most implacable foes of the Roman Empire. They forced the Roman Legions at the close of the fourth century, to retire from Wales to the eastern shores of Britain as the result of an invasion under Niall of the Nine Hostages, the most gallant of the Milesian princes, who made the ocean foam with his hostile oars. It was he who brought St. Patrick to Ireland. While marching at the head of his army on the shores of the River Loire, Niall was assassinated by the King of Leinster because of the Boru-tribute collected from the Leinstermen for a social crime of their King, Achy-Ainkenn, committed nearly four centuries before. (Joyce).

Niall was succeeded in 405 A. D. by Dathi (Danhy) who was the last pagan King of Ireland. While on an inroad in Gaul, he was killed by a flash of lightning at the foot of the Alps. His body was brought to Ireland by his soldiers and lies buried under a red pillar stone in the old pagan cemetery at Crogan.

In 433 A. D., St. Patrick visited Ireland on his great Christian mission and completed the conversion of the Kings and people from paganism

to Christianity, which had been introduced and practiced in sections of the island many years previously. The labors of the Irish Kings and people in spreading Christianity among the pagan nations of Europe opened what promised to be the happiest and the brightest chapter in the history of civilization, but closed on Ireland as the saddest and blackest.

Fabled Gods and Goddesses.

Under the Druids the people of the Celtic Islands had their fabled gods and goddesses of war. Bodb or Bava, Morrigan, Macha and Nemain were goddesses who hovered shrieking over the heads of heroes in battle. Bava and Nemain were the wives of Neit, the god of war. Ana, or Danann, a Dedannan goddess was the mother of the gods. Pap's Mountain in Kerry—anciently the Two Paps of Danann—took their name from her. Mannanan Mac-Lir of the Dedannans, was the god of the sea, who gave his name to the Isle of Man. His son was the powerful god Dagda, whose son again was Angus Mac-in-Og who dwelt in the palace of the Boyne, within the great mound of Newgrange. Bridget, the goddess of wisdom was his daughter. Dancecht was the god of healing.

The most ancient literature attests a general belief in Side (Shee) or fairies, they were local dieties and worshipt by the pagan Irish. They were supposed to live in splendid palaces in the interior of pleasant green hills, or under great rocks or sepulchral cairns. These fairy hills and rocks were called Side, each with its own tutelary deity and are still held in superstitious awe by the people. The

fairies were also called deena-Shee, people of the fairy hills, a female fairy, a banshee, bean (ban), a woman. Finnvarra, the fairy of Knockma near Taum in Galway is still remembered; so is Aed-Roe of the green hills of Mullinashee beside Bally-Shannon; and Donn of Knock-fierna near Crom in Limerick who ruled all the Limerick plain.

Cleena, the ban-shee of South Munster, had her palace in the heart of a pile of rocks, Carrig-Cleena, near Mallow and gave its name to Tonn-Cleena (Cleena's Wave) off Glendore, in Cork. The guardian spirit of the Delcassians of North Munster, was the beautiful Ervin of Craglea, a great grey rock rising over Lough-Derg, near Killaloe.

The oldest literature identifies the deenashee with the Dedannans, who after their conquest, retired to remote places and in time became deified. They possest Tir-nam-boe, a land of everlasting youth and peace—the land of the everliving; Tirnanoge, the land of perpetual youth; MoyMall, situated deep in the earth in a great sparry cave all in a blaze of light, sometimes represented as O'Brazil out in the Atlantic Ocean. Also it was Tir-fa-tonn, the country beneath the waves.

The Druids' most solemn and binding oath was, by the sun and moon, water and air, day and night, sea and land. (Joyce).

Druidism.

The Pagan religion of the Gallic-Celts was Druidism as it also was of the Teutonic-Germans. Their priesthood was styled "Wise men," who, like the Brahmans of the Hindu tribes, attended to divine worship, expounded the laws of their order; per-

formed public and private religious services and superintended the education of the youth.

All public and private quarrels came under their jurisdiction. If a crime was committed, or a murder perpetrated; if a controversy arose about a legacy or a land mark—all were sent before the Druids as judges. They fixed rewards and punishments. Should any individual, private or public, disobey their decrees, he was excluded from the sacrifice, which was deemed the most severe punishment. A person under such an interdict was deemed impious and wicked, from whom every one recoiled in both conversation and association lest they become injured by contact with him. He could not obtain legal redress when he asked for it, nor be admitted to an honorable office until he returned to obedience. The chief held the highest office among the Druids. All were under one chief. When he died he was succeeded by the most worthy member of the order.

The Druids assembled yearly in the territory of Canutes, their sacred place in the center of Gaul. To that spot were gathered from everywhere, all persons that had quarrels, and there received their judgments and decrees. The Druids took no part in war, nor paid taxes like the rest of the people. They were exempt from all public burdens, a favored condition that attracted many to them for instruction by choice, while others were sent by their parents. The students were required to learn so great a number of verses, that some remained for twenty years. They thot it an unhallowed thing to commit their lore to writing; altho in

public and private affairs, they used the Greek alphabet. Beyond all things they desired to inspire a belief that the souls of men did not perish, but transmigrated after death from one individual to another. They held that people were thereby most strongly urged to bravery as the fear of death was thus destroyed. They instructed their youths about the stars and their motions; about the size of the world and of nations; about the nature of things generally and more especially about the power and might of the immortal gods.

This powerful priesthood used all their influence to uphold the nationalities of the Gallic-Celts against the Romans and urged their people to resistance; so much so that the Emperor Claudius formally interdicted the practice of their rites in both Gaul and Britain, but that did not stop them, they continued their practices until supplanted by the rise of Christianity. While Druidism was, like the Pagan religions of Greece and early Rome, a Polytheism—it was in nowise licentious, as is evidenced by the prohibitive edict of Emperor Claudius. It was inspiringly patriotic, enabling the Irish, Scotch and Welsh to defy the legions of Rome, and afterwards to repel the pirate inroads of the Saxon, Dane and Norman; and continue the fight against the robber barons until they placed a King of their own blood on the throne of England. It has been the same spirit of liberty, which has for seven hundred and sixty years, enabled the Irish to maintain a fight against the evils introduced into their country by Henry II and Pope Adrian IV, in 1154. It was that inherited spirit which caused their

descendants in America to unite under Washington and win from George III, religious and political freedom.

When our Saviour appeared upon earth, both islands were inhabited by a proud and prosperous race, valiant in war and skilled in many of the arts and sciences of civilization. They possessed beautiful, fertile realms, open to the ocean on every side; yet made secure from invasion by the charms of friendship, as much as by the force of arms. They were respected and protected because their treatment of neighboring nations was both hospitable and equitable. Still like all honorable people they feared no mortal foe, not even Caesar, who found them adepts in the science of war and brave defenders of their island homes.

In the height of the renown and glory acquired by the united efforts of both islands in the final expulsion of the Romans, the Invisible, Spiritual God of Creation sent St. Patrick to teach the people peace, instead of war; to beg their chiefs to sheath their conquering swords, discard their Pagan war gods, lay aside their war-bonnets, accept his simple cowl and follow him in the foot-steps of Christ, the prince of peace and good will among men.

It was the good fortune (perhaps events will say the misfortune) of Ireland, to be selected by St. Patrick as the most suitable place to expound the Gospel of his Master. The greatest of the Milesian Chiefs filled with the true spirit of Christ by the preaching of St. Patrick; broke their swords, surrendered their scepters, and devoted their future

lives to spiritual instead of worldly affairs; thus leaving their homes and country to be defended from invasion by less experienced and warlike men at a most critical period when the Jute, Dane and Norse pirates were commencing their savage attacks on the coasts not only of Hibernia, but on the homes of Caledonia, Cambria and Britannia. Those disturbing pirates at first made flying visits in quest of plunder without attempts at permanent settlement, until after the expulsion of the Romans from Britain left in the southeast corner of that island, a cowardly, inferior mixture of people the degenerate product of Roman camp followers and timid Celts, who called the Jute pirates to defend them from the Caledonian and Cambrian Celts, who with the Hibernians had expelled the Romans. Instead of defending the degenerate Britains the Jutes expelled them from that section of the island and forced those whom they did not kill to seek shelter in Cornwall, Wales, Caledonia, and in Brittany, France.

While Continental Europe and Southeast Britain were being torn and demoralized by savage wars for five centuries after the birth of Christ, Ireland enjoyed comparative peace on her own soil as the Romans failed to attack her. This peace enabled the Irish under the guidance of God to establish on their own soil the first Christian university in the world, where after the dark ages, the lamps of a new and better civilization were lit, sending the light of Christianity out over the Pagan nations of Europe.

If there are any people in the world who have

reason to be proud of their ancestry they are the Irish, Scotch and Welsh, whose fathers while united as members of the same race defied the power of the Roman legions to subdue them, and in later times, tho divided, by the demons of king-craft and religious discord from the sons of Ireland, Wales and Scotland, alone maintained their independence against brutish Normans.

As the Celtic blood and brain of Ireland, Scotland and Wales, constitute a large portion of the Celtic-Teutonic amalgam which is producing our new American race, we shall dwell at length without apology, on the evils which forct those Celtic families to seek early homes under the flag of America.

It was only the Celts of Ireland whose chiefs had exchanged their swords and war bonnets for the cowl and cross of Christ upon whom the Franco-Norman Kings and Popes, the demons of Europe, were able to execute the vengeance of their combined despotic natures as we shall show in the following pages. Instead of being a nation of unconquerable warriors, Ireland became the peaceful abode of Christian piety and learning; a sanctuary to whose shelter scholars fled from the tumults raging in Britain and on the Continent of Europe; Christian universities were establisht at Armagh and at Durrow, which soon became celebrated thruout Western Europe.

Irish Missionaries preacht the Gospel of Christ in Britain and the surrounding Isles; in Italy, Switzerland and France. St. Columbanus founded the monastery of Iona; and Aidan, one of his

monks, founded the yet more celebrated bishopric and seminary at Lindisfarne which sent missionaries to all of the Heathen kingdoms. Cuthbert the apostle of the Lowlands from his mission station at Melrose, traveled over bogs, moors and rough mountain sides preaching the religion of Christ to the Pagan peasants of Scotland and Northumberland. The zeal of Irish missionaries, made the North of Britain superior in means of education to other portions of the island. The first English library was established in the Cathedral of York and there also was conducted the celebrated school of Archbishop Egbert, and afterwards of Alcuin, the friend and tutor of the illustrious Frankish Monarch Charlemagne. Tho of Saxon descent, Alcuin learned all he knew of art, literature and science, on the banks of the Shannon.

* St. Aidan with a party of Irish Monks past into the North of England in the seventh century at the time it was occupied by the Jute pirates, where he educated and converted many to Christianity.

St. Columbanus, an Irish, Greek, Latin and Hebrew Scholar, acquired in the schools of his own country, established monasteries at Luxen and Fontaine, France; he also founded the Abbey of Bobbio in Italy, where he died in 615. His disciple and companion, St. Gall, was also a student of languages but by reason of ill-health retired to a desert on the River Steinaha, in Switzerland, where he died. The disciples of St. Gall and St. Columbanus, founded monasteries in England, Italy, Germany, Switzerland and France. St. Fiacre founded a monastery in the forest of Brodole in

France, where he died. St. Aidan of the Abbey of Hy, was the apostle of the Kingdom of Northumberland, in England, where he went at the request of King Oswald, who embraced Christianity, while an exile in Ireland, and became king after the death of his uncle, Edwin. Aidan preached the Gospel with great success, Oswald acting as interpreter between his missionary and his people. Aidan died in 631. Reverend Bede said of him: "The life of Aidan was edifying. All who attended him, both monks and laity, were obliged to occupy themselves either in reading the scriptures or learning psalms. He was never influenced thru fear to spare the rich for their faults, and the money he received was applied in relieving the poor and in the ransom of slaves. His life was an example of charity, humanity and every virtue. From Aidan's time, numbers of Irish poured into Britain, preaching the faith and administering baptism and educating old and young."

Aidan founded an Episcopal See at Lindisfarn, of which he was the first Bishop and founded churches and monasteries in different places. He remained Bishop of Lindisfarn for seventeen years and died in 651. He was succeeded by St. Finian, who baptized Penda, King of the interior provinces, and Sigebert, King of the East Angles, with the lords of their retinue, and sent priests to instruct and baptize their subjects. St. Colman succeeded Finian. To these three bishops of Lindisfarn, the Northumberlands were indebted for their knowledge of Christ.

St. Furse, a grandson of Finloge, Prince of Southern Munster, and brother of St. Brendan of

Clonfert, founded a monastery on the Island of Rathmat. After laboring there, twelve years, he went to England with some disciples where he was kindly received in 637 by Sigebert, King of the East Saxons. After founding an abbey at Connersburg and inducing the King to abdicate the throne and become a monk, St. Fursey accepted an invitation from Clovis II of France to settle near Paris, where he built three chapels on the river Marne, dedicating one to Our Savior, one to St. Peter, and the third took his own name after his death in 648. St. Arbogast built an oratory near where the present city of Hagueneau is located. He became Bishop of Strasburg in 646 and died in 659.

Madulphus, an Irish monk, and very learned, went to England in 676 and founded a monastery and school in Wiltshire, now Malmesburg. Among the great number of ancient students educated there, was St. Aldelen who succeeded him and was the first Saxon to write in Latin, either in prose or verse.

St. Kilian, the apostle of Franconia, left Ireland with two disciples. He went thru Flanders and Germany to Rome, where the Pope ordained and appointed him to preach the Gospels to the infidels of Franconia, where he converted Prince Gosbert and a great number of his subjects. He established his See at Wirtzburg and was its first bishop. He suffered Martyrdom in 689, from St. Columbanus to St. Kilian, all were either Irish princes, or near relatives of its nobility.

After Bede left the Irish schools, he visited Rome for study in the books of the old and new testaments,

upon which he made scholarly comments. In his old age he translated St. John's Gospel, into Saxon, which in later years, formed the basis of the present English language. When Joan of Arc, chased England off the Continent of Europe, Britain was so mortified in having her generals defeated by a shepherdess, that her parliament in 1357 adopted a statue requiring the use of English instead of French in her courts of justice, and in the making of deeds. English was then a mere hodge-podge, medley of Latin, French, Saxon and Gallic. It could scarcely be called a language, but any jargon had more music for the English ear, than that of their hateful conqueror. Thus England in future, lookt to the degraded serfs in her fields rather than to the schools of Paris for linguistic perfection, which she has not yet found. No English book publisht in 1357 can be understood in 1915 by the average Englishman.

Both the language and literature of Ireland, justified the good opinion of Prince Alfred and the venerable Bede who with other Saxon students restored to its schools for information, where they were welcomed and maintained gratuitously. What was the nature and extent of Irish literature in the days of Alfred and Bede. The Sanskrit, the Zend, the Slavic, the Greek, the Latin, the Teutonic and the Celtic are members of the highest developpt languages known to science and of these the Celtic is pronounc't to be the purest and least spoiled. The philosophical linguists of Germany, Switzerland, Denmark and France are profuse in their praise of the Celtic Branch and more particularly of the Irish

who had an alphabet of their own before the Phoenician letters, which were borrowed by the rest of Europe, could reach them. The date of Ireland's written literature is still undetermined. It is, however, no longer questionable that a voluminous body of literature—poetic, historic or legal—whether written or held in the capacious memories of brehon, bard or historian, existed before the coming of St. Patrick. By the introduction of Christianity the Irish mind was deepened and quickened and its scope of activity vastly enlarged. Innumerable manuscripts were produced on all manner of subjects during Ireland's Golden Age of Enlightenment; from the fifth to the ninth centuries, the advent of Christianity and the invasion of the Danes.

The Vikings hated the Christian religion its learning and institutions. The monasteries and churches were the particular objects of their plundering and destroying fury. Their special delight was to discover, pillage and cast into the sea the manuscripts wherein the scholarship and literature of Ireland was enshrined. This practice is clearly proven by numerous authentic references. The loss thus incurred was immense and irreparable and continental philologists wax eloquent in deploring and denouncing the barbarity which thus gave to oblivion the fruit of Irish genius in literature and other forms of art.

Still the scholars of Erin tho sadly disturbed by Dane, Saxon, and Norman continued to speak and write their own beautiful Aryan tongue down to the eighteenth century; when England by Penal laws

resolved to be rid of everything that fostered the Irish memory of the past and kept alive the spirit of nationality. They endeavored to extirpate the language and literature inextricably entwined with the stirring recollection and heroic traditions of a freedom-loving, emotional, imaginative and intellectual race.

Irish art of every kind, reached its highest perfection in the twelfth century after which all mental cultivation degenerated on account of the human blight that was cast over the people by the infamous sale of Ireland by Pope Adrian IV, to King Henry II, in 1155, which commenced the most sublime struggle ever made by a people to save the character of a race from destruction by the united slanders of a mercenary pope and a robber king; who though injuring failed to destroy the spirit of the race, nor the literary records of their glory that were cherished by the scholars of Europe in libraries beyond the vandal reach of a Henry VIII and of a Cromwell and the poisoned pens of English historians.

Dr. Kuno Meyer in a lecture on Celtic Christianity delivered in London said: "It was impossible for any one approaching the study of the earliest Christian period in Ireland, not to lament the reckless and wanton destruction of Irish antiquities and manuscripts, of which there were a great many instances. Every one heard of the constant recurrence of these acts of vandalism. Remains of oratories, churches and inscribed stones were pulled down in different parts of the country. The whole of Ireland was at one time covered with early Christian monuments, every one of which of-

ferred a problem to be solved. There was clear and convincing evidence of the fact that Christianity existed in Ireland before St. Patrick came amongst the people. There was plenty of evidence of that to be found in the writings of St. Patrick himself."

Spaulding says: "Without the indefatigable industry of the monks we would not now be able to feast on the eloquence of Cicero and Demosthenes, nor be charmed with the beautiful strains of Homer and Virgil. Consequently it is to be deplored that for nearly two centuries, commencing with the reign of Henry VIII, the destruction of the monasteries, the principal, if not the only depositaries of such, was decreed, at least it would appear so, as the edict went forth that all such should be destroyed; so as far as possible, the same were wantonly and recklessly given to the flames; and as the libraries contained hundreds of thousands of the most valuable manuscripts on every known subject, the loss was irreparable."

From the days of Caesar the nations of Europe on their own battle fields have witnessed the spirit of the Gaelic Celts in behalf of liberty. When the Irish, Welsh and Scotch were united as members of a common race, they defied the Legions of Rome. In the late Boer war, every victory gained by England, was credited to some Irish, Scotch or Welsh command. The same race produced the statesmen, orators, and scientists of England, with very few exceptions. This is too evident to be denied, but after the sweeping destructions by the Danes and then by Henry VIII, and Cromwell of the literary records of Ireland in books and man-

uscripts England tells the world that the Irish never had a literature. No illiterate people could have produced the beautifully illuminated books that have been brought to light in Ireland and in continental Europe during the nineteenth century; declared by disinterested and competent judges to be the most beautiful books in the world.

The most noted of these is the "Book of Kells," now in the library of the Dublin University. It is an illuminated manuscript of the Four Gospels in Latin. It contains prefaces, explanations of the meaning of the Hebrew names; summaries and tables of the Eusebian Canon. The date of its execution is uncertain, but it is said to be of the second century. The "Book of Armagh" is almost as beautiful as the "Book of Kells." Among other things it contains a life of St. Patrick and a complete copy of the New Testament in Latin. It was finished in 807 by Ferdomnach of Armagh and is now in the library of Trinity College, Dublin. Another scarcely inferior is the "Book of Macdurna," containing the Gospels written in the ninth century and preserved in the Archbishop's library at Lambeth.

Dr. Westwood, the English Archeologist says; that with the aid of a powerful lens he counted within the space of one inch in the "Book of Kells," one hundred and sixty interlacements of bands, or ribands, each riband composed of a strip of white bordered on each side with a black strip. Dr. Middleton of Cambridge says: "The illuminated delicacy of the ornamentation of this book lavishly decorated as it is with all the different varieties of ingeniously intricate and knotted lines of color

plaited in and out with such complicated interlacement that one cannot look at the page without astonishment at the combined taste, patience, unfaltering certainty of touch and imaginative ingenuity of the artist. Without regard to the intricate interlace in which with the aid of a lens each line can be followed out in its windings and never found to break off or lead to an impossible loop of knotting; it is evident that the artist must have enjoyed not only an esthetic pleasure in the invention of his pattern, but must have a distinctive intellectual enjoyment of his work, such as a skillful mathematician in working out a complicated mathematical problem."

Giraldus Cambrensis, the Welsh flatterer of Henry II. and among the first paid slanderers of the Irish when sent by Henry on an embassy to Ireland in 1185 denied that the "Book of Kells" was the work of an Irishman, but insisted that it could have been written only by angels. Little wonder! Fancy what seems a mere colored dot to the naked eye becoming under the power of the microscope a conventional bunch of foliage with a conventional bird among the branches.

Dr. Heinrich Zimmer, professor of Philology in the University of Greifswald, Germany says: "Ireland can indeed lay claim to a great past, she cannot only boast of having been the birth place and abode of high culture in the fifth and sixth centuries, but also of having made strenuous efforts in the seventh and up to the tenth century to spread her learning among the German and Romanic peo-

ples, thus forming the actual foundation of our present continental civilization."

In describing the "Book of Kells," Professor Zimmer says: "In its delicacy of handling and minute but faultless execution, the whole range of paleography offers nothing comparable to it and these early Irish manuscripts.

Dr. D. Wyatt says: "The most marvelous of all, is the "Book of Kells," some of the ornaments of which I attempted to copy but broke down in despair."

Waagen says: "The ornamental pages, borders and initial letters exhibit such a rich variety of beautiful and peculiar designs, so admirable a taste in the arrangement of the colors and such uncommon perfection and finish that one is absolutely lost in amazement." It is chiefly a sort of beautiful interlace work formed on bands, ribbons and cords, which are twisted and interwoven in the most intricate way, mixed up with waves and spires and sometimes you see the faces or forms of dragons, serpents, or other strange looking animals; their tails, ears or tongues lengthened out and woven till they become mixed up with the general design; and sometimes odd looking human faces, or figures of men or angels. The pattern is often so minute as to require the aid of a magnifying glass to examine it. The scribes usually made the capital letters so large as to fill an entire page, and on these they exerted their utmost skill. They also painted the open spaces of the letters and ornaments in brilliant colors, like the scribes of other countries, which art was called illumination. All the books were written by hand.

Penmanship as an art was carefully cultivated and brought to great perfection. The old scribes were generally, but not always monks and were held in great honor. Their method of ornamentation was not used by the scribes of other countries."

Camden says: "Anglo-Saxons went in those times to Ireland as if to a fair, to purchase knowledge, and we often find that if a person was absent, it was generally said of him, by way of a proverb, that he was sent to Ireland to receive his education. Prince Albert, King of Northumberland, spent many years in the schools of Ireland, studying philosophy and science."

The venerable Bede assures us that many of his countrymen had been accustomed to going to Ireland in search of knowledge, where they were received and supported gratuitously. It was the writings of Irish monks who went to England under St. Aiden at the request of Oswald, King of Northumberland, to educate and Christianize his subjects, which caused, in after years, confusion in continental libraries, over manuscripts written by Irish scribes, but named Anglo-Saxon, by those who would deprive Ireland of her well earned fame for scholarship.

M. Darmesteter, the eminent French authority on early history, says: "The Renaissance began in Ireland seven hundred years before it was known in Italy. During three centuries, Ireland was the asylum of the higher learning which took sanctuary there from the uncultured states of Europe. At one time Armagh, the religious capital of Christian Ireland, was the metropolis of civilization."

Dr. Holger Pederson, professor of ancient languages in the University of Copenhagen, describing the Scandinavians as Ireland's troublesome guests says: "They resided long enough in the country to be strongly influenced by Irish culture, therefore the history of the Spiritual development of Scandinavia could not be thoroly understood without referring to their teachers—the Irish people." Again he says: "It is the Irish nation that bestowed Medieval learning upon Europe. It is the Irish nation that possest the most wonderful medieval literature and the Irish language the most interesting language in Europe."

Dr. Douglas Hyde says: "The remnant manuscripts preserved from destruction by the Danes and English would fill fourteen hundred octavo volumes and probably more."

The most important remains of them are found in Trinity College, Dublin; Maynooth, the British Museum; the Bodleian Library, Oxford, and in Milan, St. Gall and Berne, Switzerland; in Vienna, Wurtemberg and Carlsruhe. The manuscripts at Milan, St. Gall, Wurtemberg and Berne, were edited and published by at least four distinguished scholars: Ascoli, Nigra, Stokes and Zeuss, the later being the great German pioneer and master of modern Celtic research; and Stokes, the greatest living authority upon the old Irish language. This new school of Celtic research has been in the hands of German, French and Danish scholars, who are thoroly accurate and unbiast, to whom research is a science, and not as in England, for misrepresentation and slander. The shining sun of the God of Creation

is once more bringing back "Truth, the best of all," to expose and burn out of at least American records, the British slanders against the Irish, a race that has been for more than two thousand years in the van of Pagan and Christian civilization; models of virtue and defenders of liberty, justice and equality.

The fountain of Irish knowledge was active and clear for fifteen centuries before the Saxon and Norman periods. Her language—pure Celt—was as old as Hebrew and more ancient than Greek or Latin. It is the key to the pyramids of Egypt and the antiquities of Etruria and India. Its simplicity of structure and directness of expression, prove it to be one of the basic tongues and not a derived language. Before St. Patrick died, and before a Jute or a Saxon set foot on Romanized Britain, Ireland had become a land of Saints and scholars. The fame of her teachers drew students from Germany, Switzerland, Norway, Gaul, Spain, Italy and Britain, to be instructed in the schools on whose steps the chieftains of Ireland exchanged their scepters and swords for a cowl and a cross, and entered the ministry of Christ as disciples of peace. When Alcuin returned from Ireland to Northumberland, he found the language of the court was Irish, and not Saxon and when he set out on his travels to Europe it was the great Irish School at Bobbio, Italy, to which he hastened for further enlightenment."

One would think that the splendid services of the Irish Chiefs to the early Christians, would have saved their country from being persecuted and

slandered by the head of the church in the twelfth century, but it seems that a very bad man can become head of a church as well as king of a nation, tho it is not often that a set of very bad kings, and of worse popes are allowed to combine and traffic in the lives and reputation of a virtuous and intelligent people as they did in Ireland in 1154.

From the fifth to the eighth century the people of Ireland, as seen above were devoted to the study and teaching of Christianity. During the next two centuries they were forced to defend their country from the inroads of the Norse pirates, who pillaged their shrines and burned or threw their Christian as well as their Pagan literature into the sea, in revenge for the destruction of some of their Pagan temples by Charlemagne.

In 1014, at the celebrated battle of Clontarf, Brian-Boru, the King of Ireland, defeated the Danes and drove them from his country. It required many years to repair the damage inflicted by the Danes. Before the people had recovered their strength the grandsons of William of Normandy, who had crushed and enslaved the Saxons of England, had their faces toward Ireland as their next field of conquest.

In 1154 Henry II, became King of England and Nicholas Breakspere became Pope Adrian IV; both Anglo-Normans. Considering the immoral and despotic heritage left by William of Normandy to his sons, we should not be surprised at any audacious proposition made by Henry II to Pope Adrian IV for authority to scourge or in any way disturb the people who had been for five centuries

devoting the best of their race to the service of Christ and preparing the nations of Europe to accept His Gospel; but we are astounded to find that in May 1155, the authority was not only granted, but the undertaking blest with an apostolic benediction by the head of the church in the following infamous Bull: "Adrian, Bishop, Servant of the Servants of God, to our well-beloved Son in Christ, the Illustrious King of the English, health and Apostolical benediction. Your highness is contemplating the laudable and profitable work of garnering a glorious fame on earth, and augmenting the recompense of bliss that awaits you in Heaven, by turning your thots to the proper spirit of a Christian Prince, to the object of widening boundaries of the church explaining the true Christian faith to the ignorant and uncivilized tribes, and exterminating the nurseries of vice from the Lord's inheritance. In which matters, observing as we do the maturity of deliberation and the soundness of judgment exhibited in your mode of proceeding, we cannot but hope that the porportionate success will, with the Divine permission, attend your exertions."

"Certainly there is no doubt that Ireland, and all the Islands upon which Christ the Sun of Righteousness has shined, and which have received instructions in the Christian faith do belong of right to St. Peter and the Holy Roman Church, as your grace also admits. For which reason we are the more disposed to introduce into them a faithful plantation and to engraft among them a stock acceptable in the sight of God, in proportion as we are convinced from conscientious motives that such efforts are

made incumbent on us by the urgent claim of duty."

"You have signified to us, Son, well beloved in Christ, your desire to enter the Island of Ireland in order to bring that people into subjections to laws, and to exterminate the nurseries of vice from the country; and that you are willing to pay to St. Peter an annual tribute of one penny for every house there, and to preserve the ecclesiastical rights of that land inviolate. We therefore, meeting your pious and laudable desire with the favor which it deserves and graciously according to your petition, express our will and pleasure that, in order to widen the bounds of the Church, to check the spread of vice, to reform the state of morals and promote the inculcation of virtuous dispositions, you shall enter that island and execute therein what shall be for the honor of God and the welfare of the country, and let the people of that land receive you in honorable style and respect you as their Lord."

"Provided, always, that the ecclesiastical be uninjured and inviolate and the annual payment of one penny for every house be secured for St. Peter and the Holy Roman Church."

"If then, you shall be minded to carry into execution the plan which you have devised in your mind, use your endeavor diligently to improve that nation by the inculcation of good morals, and exert yourself, both personally and by means of your agents as you employ, (whose faith, and life, and conversation you shall have found suitable for such an undertaking) that the Church may be advanct there, that the religious influence of the Christian

faith may be planted and grow there; and that all that pertains to the honor of God and the salvation of souls may, by you, be ordered in such a way as that you may be counted worthy to obtain from God a higher degree of recompense in eternity, and at the same time succeed in gaining upon earth a name of glory thruout all generations."

Thus, the Ireland of St. Patrick which for seven hundred and nineteen years had been the most faithful teacher and supporter of the Church of Christ in all Europe, not even excepting Rome, was slandered and given over to bloodshed, murder and robbery by the head of the church in exchange for a few dirty pennies of annual tribute. The betrayal and sale of Christ by Judas to the money changers of Jerusalem, for the thirty pieces of silver, was much more honorable; as Judas was in the service of Christ less than four years, while the Irish disciples were faithful and true to His name and cause for nearly eight centuries, when sold by Adrian to his countryman—the Norman King of England. We can see now, in our imagination, the King of Darkness and his spirits of discord dancing with glee near the chair of Adrian, while preparing and signing that Bull.

Had the disgraceful matter ended with the life of Adrian the strain on the Church would soon have been forgotten by the faithful Irish, but Pope Alexander III, successor to Adrian, sent Henry congratulations with his apostolic blessing, as follows: "Alexander, Bishop, Servant of the Servants of God, to our well beloved son in Christ, Henry,

the Illustrious King of the English, greeting and apostolic benediction."

"It is not without very lively sensations of satisfaction that we have learned from the loud voice of public report, as well as from authentic statements of particular individuals of the expedition which you have made in the true spirit of a pious King and magnificent prince, against that Nation of the Irish (who in utter disregard of the fear of God, are wandering with unbridled licentiousness into every downward course of crime, and who have cast away the restraints of the Christian religion and morality and are destroying one another with mutual slaughter), and of the magnificent and astonishing triumph which you have gained over a realm into which as we are given to understand, Princes of Rome, the triumphant conquerors of the world, never in the days of their glory pushed their arms; a success to be attributed to the ordering of the Lord, by whose guidance, as we undoubtedly do believe, your serene highness was led to direct the power of your arms against that uncivilized and lawless people."

These Roman Bulls, officially started the foul slanders on the Irish people, which England has been repeating to the world for more than seven hundred years as an excuse for her own great crimes against them.

Previous to 435 A. D., the year that St. Patrick appeared as an apostle in Ireland, that nation had been governed by one hundred and thirty six kings of the Milesian dynasty; and from St. Patrick's time to that of Henry II, Ireland was ruled by sixty-

six Kings of the same Milesian dynasty, covering a period of about two thousand years of a civilized government, under the Brehon laws, which with few exceptions met the approbation of St. Patrick, and were continued after Henry II's time; as English common law.

We learn from the annals of Innisfallen that in 1110 Cormac MacCarthy was King of Munster, swaying both Crozier and crown, having taken holy orders at the monastery of Lismore, where he was an inmate before he was crowned king. Cormac was the most famous builder of castles, cathedrals, abbeys and churches that Ireland ever produced. The Rock of Cashel was his seat of government, as it had been that of the Druids for more than a thousand years before the coming of St. Patrick. In 1127 Cormac completed a Chapel adjoining his castle on the Rock. In 1134 the Cormac Chapel was consecrated by the Archbishop and Bishops of Munster, in the presence of the magnates of all Ireland, both lay and ecclesiastical. In 1167, the Cathedral, the largest building on the Rock, was consecrated. Cormac next erected the Cathedrals of Limerick and Killaloe, also the abbey of Holy Cross.

The building and consecration of Christian chapels, Cathedrals and abbeys at the time the Bulls were delivered to Henry, completely refute the slanders contained in both Bulls, against the Irish people as having lapsed from Christianity and morality.

That the mercenary popes sold and slandered the Irish disciples of Christ for a penny a house

(two cents), is an historical fact, but we find no record showing that any pennies were ever paid by the King of England, or by any of his successors. There is, however, a record indelibly written in the blood of Ireland, that its brave people refused to be delivered to the English King.

We read in the Bull of Alexander III congratulating his beloved son Henry II, King of the English, for the "magnificent and astounding triumphs which you have gained over a realm into which, as we are given to understand, the Princes of Rome, the triumphant conquerors of the world, never in the days of their glory pushed their arms." After three hundred and eighty-six years of strenuous effort to conquer that realm the Kings of the English from the Second to the Eighth Henry, were merely clinging to a fringe of the Island.

CHAPTER IX.

ADRIAN'S "BELOVED SONS."

Neither the social, moral nor religious condition of England in 1154, justified Adrian IV, nor Alexander III, to commission with apostolic blessings Henry II to scourge and demoralize the Christian people of Ireland, who, by their schools and missionaries, had made it possible for popes to exist, even in Rome.

William of Normandy based his government of England upon the feudal system of Continental Europe, under which he granted vast estates to his Franco-Norman followers, styled Barons, with absolute power over the persons of the Anglo-Saxon serfs who were attached to the soil as property, on condition that the barons should come to his support with all their serfs and vassals, when he should call them to arms. This made the barons petty sovereigns on the estates assigned to them. To secure themselves the barons erected strongly fortified castles in the midst of their vassals; then amused themselves in hunting, and in making raids upon each other, even at times threatening the conquerer himself.

Matilda and Stephen.

During the reign of King Stephen, between 1135 and 1154, no fewer than eleven hundred and fifteen Norman castles were built, described by Matthew Paris, as "Nests of devils and dens of thieves."

The bulk of the Anglo-Saxon estates were given

to a few of William's followers after reserving for himself one-third, as the "King's Forest;" he gave his brother Odo whom he created Bishop of Bayeaux two hundred Anglo-Saxon manors in Kent and as many more in other parts of England. Grants almost as large were conferred on his ministers, Fritz-Osborn, Montgomery, Mowbrays, Warrens and Clares. The poorest Norman soldier of fortune had a part in the Anglo-Saxon spoil. The humblest of the Norman conquerors rose to wealth and power thru the generosity of the conqueror. (Clare 2238).

The last Dane to hold power in England was Waltheof, son of Sievard, Earl of Northumberland. Waltheof had gained the confidence of the Conqueror and married his sister Judith, but soon fomented a revolt against William, who speedily suppress it and immured in dungeons some of the leaders, blinded others and beheaded Waltheof as a traitor.

In 1069 A. D. Sweyn, King of Denmark, in the absence of William, invaded England with a large fleet, captured York and massacred its Norman garrison of three thousand men, encouraged the Anglo-Saxon serfs to revolt and throw off the Norman yoke. After driving off the Danish fleet, the Conqueror turned upon the armed serfs of Danelogh, the fertile region of Diera, the heart of the Anglo-Saxon rebellion, and laid it so completely waste with fire and sword, that for the space of sixty miles north of York, the entire region remained for half a century, a barren waste of black ruins without a human being. A hundred thousand Saxons, on the approach of William, cowardly fled to the northern woods, only to die of starvation after returning to

the ashes of their homes. William also laid waste the coasts to prevent the Danes from finding in the future, either material for plunder or a place for a foothold in England. (Clare 2241).

William now put only Normans in the high places of both state and church. All the business of government, in courts, churches and schools, was conducted in the Norman-French language.

Even before the death of the conqueror his sons and barons, with his half brother, Odo, the Bishop of Bayeaux, at their head, commenct the wars and conspiracies that earned for them the merited title of "Robber Barons." It was the very hey-day of Franco-Norman civilization in England, when the barons erected the castles which enabled them to plunder the neighboring country, tax their tenants to the point of starvation, pillage the churches of Christ of their wealth, waylay traveling strangers whom they held in their castle-dungeons for ransom; when, following the example of the barons, criminal and outcasts, idle and starving peasants took to the woods and become outlaws in such numbers as to defy all authority. Towers were deserted, farms were neglected, the sanctuaries were filled with helpless, starving people; while thousands fled in terror from the country. The whole structure of Christian society had fallen to pieces and was swept into a general wreck. Nor was society improved under the reign of King Stephen, Henry II's immediate predecessor, between whom and the Empress Matilda, the mother of Henry, a civil war existed up to the date of his own accession. When all kinds of criminals, murderers, thieves and vaga-

bonds were among the clergy. (Dickens p. 63).

Henry II.

It was a period described by English historians (Clare 2249) in which the whole structure of society had fallen to pieces; regard for law and respect for religion having been swept away in a general wreck. The spirit of lawlessness, which commenct with the nobility permeated the priesthood. When priest and noble turned robbers, it is not surprising that the helpless peasant either became an outlaw or deserted home and harvest field and fled in consternation beyond the seas. The best element of society had become demoralized for the time being. (Clare 2253).

Such was the year of Adrian's Bull, 1155 A. D. It was the time enjoyed by Cambrensis, the Welsh friend of Henry II, who while defaming the Irish to please his Norman master, objected to being called an Englishman, exclaiming: "Who dare compare the English, the most degraded of all races under heaven, to the Welsh? In their own country, they are the serfs, the veriest slaves of the Normans. In ours, who else have we for our herdsmen, shepherds, cobblers, skimmers, cleaners of our dog kennels; aye, even our privies, but Englishmen."

The demoralization grew in fury after the crowning of Henry II. His four sons, aided and abetted by their mother, Queen Eleanor, and her divorced husband, Louis VII of France, rebelled against their father in his French Dominions, during which, Prince Henry, his oldest son was killed, leaving Richard, the next eldest son, heir to his father's dominions. As soon as his brother Geoffrey, with

whom he had been at war, had been killed in a tournament at Paris. Richard took up arms against his father, from whom he foret a free pardon for all who had taken part in his rebellion. When Henry II found that his favorite son John's name was at the head of the list of rebels he had consented to pardon, he turned his face toward the wall, saying: "Now, let the world go as it will; I care for nothing more." He died with a broken heart at the age of forty-eight years, in 1189 and was succeeded by Richard, whose rebellion had been the cause of his death. (Clare 2260).

Richard I.

The low character of Richard and his people is seen from their conduct on the day of Richard's coronation. The Jews of London at that time were numerous and wealthy. As a token of good will, they offered gifts of gold to celebrate the occasion. The Jewish messengers sent with the gifts, were forbidden by Richard to approach the banquet hall and were roughly driven away, tho their gifts were accepted. It was suddenly given out that the King had ordered a general massacre of the Jews. A brutal, bloodthirsty mob of ignorant and fanatical wretches went thru London slaughtering the defenseless Jews, burning their houses and seizing their hidden treasures. The frenzy for Jewish blood and gold seized the inhabitants of other cities of England, who repeated the same horrors. At York, five hundred Jews, with their families, fled for refuge to the castle, which was soon surrounded by a furious mob. The Jews vainly offered their wealth as a ransom for their lives. Being offered neither

justice nor mercy, they plunged their daggers into the bodies of their wives and children, and set fire to the castle, perishing in the flames. Richard ended his reign as he began, grasping for gold in a private quarrel with the Viscount of Limousin, in his castle of Chalus, France, in 1199. (Clare 2261).

King John.

John succeeded Richard and is described as having been weak, cowardly, incompetent, cruel, tyrannical and licentious; more beastly licentious than all his predecessors. He quarreled with Pope Innocent III, who promptly ex-communicated him, placed England under an interdict and called all Christian princes and barons to make war upon him, and commissioned the King of France to execute his decrees. This brought his "Beloved Son, the King of the English" to terms, who on his knees acknowledged himself a vassal of the Pope in the following words: "I John, by the grace of God; King of England and Lord of Ireland, in order to expiate my sins, from my own free will and the advice of my barons, give to the Church of Rome, to Pope Innocent III, and his successors, the Kingdom of England and all other perogatives of my crown. I will hereafter hold them as the Pope's vassal. I will be faithful to God, to the Church of Rome, to the Pope, my master, and to his successors legitimately elected. I promise to pay him a tribute of a thousand marks yearly, to-wit: Seven hundred for the Kingdom of England, and three hundred for the Kingdom of Ireland." (Clare 2267).

This humble surrender of English liberties to the head of the Church was made by John's "free-

will and the advice of my barons." John now found that his barons had a few demands to make in their own interests. Electing Robert Fitz-Walter, for their general, exalting him with the title of "Mareschal of the Army of God and of the Holy Church," they (not a Saxon among them) demanded a conference with John, in the meadow called Runnymede, on the Thames. There, on June 15, 1215, a host of knights, warriors, archbishops, bishops, cardinals and earls, from England, Ireland and Scotland, met John, the craven and licentious "King of the English," who once more faced Master Pandolf, our lord the Pope's subdeacon and servant, at whose feet he knelt when becoming the vassal of Pope Innocent III, and now present to affirm the rights of the church to "be free and enjoy her whole liberties inviolate." This so-called charter of English liberties forced from King John, only the privileges of the church, and to the barons, not to be taken, imprisoned, dispossessed, outlawed, banished or destroyed, but by the lawful judgment of their peers, or by the law of the land, and not to sell, delay or deny to any one, right or justice. The bishops and the barons held their charter, but before daybreak, King John fled from Windsor, sent a copy of the charter to Innocent III with a statement that it had been wrenched from him by force. Innocent III annulled the charter and excommunicated all who sustained it. With an army of foreign soldiers behind him, King John broke all of his promises, marched from south to north, laying waste the kingdom with fire and sword, as far as the borders of Scotland, when he suddenly died in October 1216. (Clare 2273).

Henry III.

John was succeeded by his son Henry III, then a boy only ten years old. When twenty, Henry assumed the government. He immediately made the so-called Magna Charter ridiculous by the following declaration: "When and wherever, and as often as it may be our pleasure, we may declare, interpret, enlarge or diminish, the aforesaid statutes and their several parts, by our own free will, and as to us may seem expedient for the security of us and our land."

And this remained his policy for forty years; while the barons distracted by feuds among themselves stood idly by. The courts of justice, under the influence of the crown became a legalized system of extortion and robbery; the judges on their circuits compounded felonies and sold justice to the highest bidder.

Edward II.

The depravity of English society continued in the fourteenth century, under Edward II. The barons took up arms under the Earls of Hereford and Lancaster, but were defeated. Hereford was slain and Lancaster taken prisoner and beheaded. Roger Mortimer, the Queen's paramour, was taken and condemned to death, but the Queen succeeded in having the sentence commuted to imprisonment in the tower. King Charles of France took advantage of the domestic troubles of England, to get possession of Edward's territory in France. To prevent this Queen Isabella was sent by Edward to Paris to arrange matters with her brother, King of France. Mortimer, Isabella's paramour, escaped

from the tower and joined Isabella who having no love for her husband plotted for his overthrow and was aided by her brother with men and money.

In 1326, Isabella returned to England with an army and raised the standard of revolt against her husband, ostensibly to overthrow Hugh Spencer, but really to secure power for herself and Mortimer. She was joined by the barons and hailed as a deliverer by all classes. King Edward II being deserted and helpless fled from London, embarked for the Isle of Lundy, but was driven on the coast of Wales at Swansea. Isabella took Bristol and barbarously executed Hugh Spencer's father, an old man of ninety who commanded there. King Edward and Hugh Spencer were captured at Glamorganshire. Spencer was crowned with nettles and hanged while Edward II was imprisoned in Kenilworth Castle. Edward, Prince of Wales, a boy of fourteen years was made regent by his mother and Mortimer, but the Prince having no authority the Kingdom was in a most deplorable condition. The mobs of London and other cities committed robberies and murders with impunity and were called Riflers. (Clare 2290).

In 1327 Isabella summoned a parliament at Westminster to depose King Edward declaring him unworthy to rule. The great independent and moral parliament of England, obeyed the orders of their liberty-loving and virtuous Queen (?) proclaimed her son King of England, by acclamation. A deputation was sent to Kenilworth Castle to procure from the dethroned King a formal abdication. After Edward II recovered from a faint caused by

the appearance of the deputation he told them that he was in their power and must submit to their will. Sir William Trussel in the name of the people of England then renounc't all fealty to Edward of Caernarvon, styled from the place of his birth in Wales, to carry out a low trick of his father, Edward I—on the patriotic people of Wales. Sir Francis Blount, High Stewart, broke his staff and declared all the King's officers discharged from his service. The dethroned King was committed to the custody of some wretches who did all in their power to kill him by ill usage. They hurried him like a common felon from castle to castle in the middle of the night only half clothed. Then for their own sport had him shaved in an open field with water from a dirty ditch refusing him any other. While the tears were trickling down Edward's cheeks because of such treatment he said, with a smile of grief, "Here is clean, warm water whether you will or no." Roger Mortimer, the Queen's paramour, seeing a reaction setting in among the people because of such treatment, had Edward II horribly murdered in Berkely castle, September 21, 1327. (Clare 2291).

King Edward III, becoming aware of the ambitious designs of Mortimer, who caused the King's uncle, the Duke of Kent, to be executed, and the Earl of Lancaster to be imprisoned, resolved at the age of eighteen to take the government into his own hands. Isabella and Mortimer then escapt to Nottingham castle the keys of which were brought to the queen mother's bedside every night, with guards at every avenue of approach; but with a small trusty band, King Edward III, guided by the governor of

the castle, took the garrison by surprise, seized Mortimer, in Isabella's presence and bore him to prison from where he was brought before parliament; condemned for the murder of Edward II and hanged on an elm at Tyburn in 1330. Isabella was consigned to a life imprisonment in Castle Rising, where she spent the remaining twenty-seven years of her immoral life. (Clare 2292).

Henry VIII.

Seventeen years after the discovery of America, Henry VIII came to the throne of England, at the age of eighteen years, and reigned thirty-eight years. He was the second of the Welsh, or Tudor Dynasty, and as a social and a religious demoralizer had no equal since the time of Nero. Dickens says: "He was one of the most detestable villians that ever drew breath. When he came to the throne, people said he was handsome; but I don't believe it. He was a big, burly, noisy, small-eyed, large-faced, double-chinned, swinish-looking fellow in later life. Those whom the King convicted on false charges, were pilloried and set on horses with their faces to the tails and knocked about and beheaded, to the satisfaction of the people and the enrichment of the King. Claiming to be a devout friend of the Pope he sent a herald to the King of France, to say that he must not make war upon that holy parsonage, because he was the father of all Christians."

Henry wrote a book about it with which the Pope was so well pleased that he gave the King the title of "Defender Of The Faith."

About this time, having become tired of Queen Catherine who had been the wife of his brother and

was getting old, and who had never been handsome, while Anne Boleyn, one of her attendants was young and beautiful, the King sent Catherine away and concluded he would be divorced and marry Anne Boleyn, but in this he was opposed by the Pope and Cardinal Wolsey. Henry found a learned doctor of Cambridge named Thomas Cranmer and took him to Lord Rochfort, Anne Boleyn's father, and said "Take this learned Doctor down to your country house and there let him have a good room for a study, and no end of good books out of which to prove that I may marry your daughter." In such a room, how could the learned Doctor fail to find what his King desired? "The King made Cranmer Archbishop of Canterbury and directed Catherine to leave the court. She obeyed; but replied that wherever she went, she was Queen of England still and would remain so to the last. The King then married Anne Boleyn privately, and the Archbishop of Canterbury, within a half year, declared his marriage with Queen Catherine void, and crowned Anne Boleyn Queen."

"She might have known that no good could ever come from such wrong, and that the corpulent brute who had been so faithless and so cruel to his first wife could be more faithless and more cruel to his second."

"One of the most atrocious features of this reign was that Henry VIII was always trimming between the reformed religion and the unreformed one, so that the more he quarreled with the Pope, the more of his own subjects he roasted alive for not holding the Pope's opinions." (Dickens).

“Thomas Cromwell, who had been one of Wolsey’s faithful attendants and had remained so even in his decline, advised the King to take the matters into his own hands and make himself the head of the whole church. This the King, by various artful means, began to do; but he recompensd the clergy by allowing them to burn as many as they pleased, for holding Luther’s opinions.”

“An unfortunate student named John Frith, and a poor, simple tailor named Andrew Hewet, who loved him very much and said that whatever John Frith believed, he believed, were burned at Smithfield to show what a capital Christian the King was. But these were followed by two much greater victims, Sir John More, and John Fisher, the Bishop of Rochester. The latter who was a good and amiable old man had committed no greater offense than believing in Elizabeth Barton, called Maid of Kent, another of those ridiculous women who pretended to be inspired, and to make all sorts of heavenly revelations, tho they indeed uttered nothing but evil nonsense. For this offense, as it was pretended, but really for denying the King to be the head of the Church—he got into trouble and was put in prison, but even then, he might have been suffered to die naturally (short work having been made of executing the Kentish Maid and her principal followers) but that the Pope, to spite the King, resolved to make him a Cardinal. Upon that the King made a ferocious joke to the effect that the Pope might send Fisher a red hat, which is the way they make a Cardinal—but he should have no head on which to wear it, and he was tried with all

unfairness and sentenced to death. He died like a noble and virtuous old man and left a worthy name behind him. The King supposed, I dare say, that Sir Thomas More would be frightened by this example; but as he was not to be easily terrified, and thoroly believing in the Pope, had made up his mind that the King was not the rightful head of the Church. He positively refused to say that he was. For this crime he, too, was tried and sentenced, after having been in prison a whole year." When he was going up the steps of the scaffold to his death, he jokingly said to the Lieutenant of the Tower, observing that they were weak and shook beneath his tread: "I pray you Master Lieutenant, see me safe up; and for my coming down, I can shift for myself." Also he said to the executioner, after he had laid his head upon the block, Let me put my beard out of the way; for that, at least, has never committed any treason." Then his head was struck off at a blow. These two executions were worthy of King Henry VIII. Sir Thomas More was one of the most virtuous men in his dominions, and the Bishop was one of his oldest and truest friends. But to be a friend of that fellow, was almost as dangerous as to be his wife. (Dickens).

"When the news of these two murders got to Rome, the Pope prepared a Bull, ordering his subjects to take arms against him and dethrone him. The King took all possible precautions to keep that document out of his dominions and set to work in return, to suppress a great number of the English Monastries and abbeys."

"This destruction was begun by a body of com-

missioners of which Thomas Cromwell (whom the King had taken into great favor) was the head; and was carried on thru some years to its entire completion. The King's officers and men punished the good monks with the bad; did great injustice; demolished many beautiful things and many valuable libraries; destroyed numberless paintings, stained glass windows, fine pavements and carvings; and that the whole court were ravenously greedy and rapacious for the division of this great spoil among them. The King seems to have grown almost mad in the ardor of this pursuit; for he declared Thomas a Becket, a traitor, tho he had been dead many years, and had his body dug up out of his grave. The gold and jewels on his shrine filled two great chests and eight men tottered as they carried them away. How rich the monasteries were, you may infer from the fact that, when they were all suppressed, 130,000 pound a year—in those days an immense sum—came to the crown." (Dickens).

"The Monks who were driven out of their homes wandered about among the people to whom they had been kind and encouraged their discontent, causing great risings in Lincolnshire and Yorkshire. These were put down by terrific executions, from which the monks themselves did not escape, and the King went on grunting and growling in his own fat way, like a Royal pig."

"Cranmer had done what he could to save some of the church property for purposes of religion and education, but the great families had been so hungry to get hold of it, that very little could be rescued for such objects. Even Miles Coverdale, who did

the people the inestimable service of translating the Bible into English (which the unreformed religion never permitted to be done) was left in poverty while the great families clutcht the church lands and money." (Dickens).

"One of the most active writers on the church's side against the King, was a member of his own family, a sort of distant cousin, Reginald Pole, by name—who attackt him in the most violent manner. As he was beyond the King's reach—being in Italy—the King politely invited him over to discuss the subject; but he, knowing better than to come, and wisely staying where he was, the King's rage fell upon his brother, Lord Montague, the Marquis of Exeter, and some other gentlemen, who were tried for high treason in corresponding with him and aiding him—which they probably did—and were all executed. His mother, the venerable Countess of Salisbury, who was, unfortunately within the tyrant's reach—was the last of his relations on whom his wrath fell. When she was told to lay her gray head upon the block she answered the executioner, 'No; my head never committed treason, and if you want it, you shall seize it.' She ran round and round the scaffold with the executioner striking at her, and her gray hair bedabbled with blood, and even when they held her down on the block, she moved her head about to the last, resolved to be no party to her own barbarous murder. All this the people bore as they had borne everything else. Indeed they bore much more; for the slow fires of Smithfield were continuously burning, and people were constantly being roasted to

death to show what a good Christian the King was. He defied the Pope and his Bull, which was now come to England; but he burned innumerable people whose only offense was that they differed from the Pope's religious opinions.

"The national spirit seems to have been banisht from the Kingdom at this time. The very people who were executed for treason, the very wives and friends of the 'bluff' King, spoke of him on the scaffold as a good prince, and a gentle prince. The Parliament were as bad as the rest, and gave the king whatever he wanted, among other vile accommodations, they gave him new powers of murdering at his will and pleasure, anyone whom he might choose to call a traitor. Death terminated his crimes at the age of 56. The plain truth is, he was a most intolerable ruffian, a disgrace to human nature, a blot of blood and grease upon the history of England." (Dickens).

Dickens tells us that Henry VIII at the time of his death was a swollen, hideous spectacle, with a great hole in his leg, and so odious to every sense that it was dreadful to approach him; and that he was a most intolerable ruffian, a disgrace to human nature and a blot of blood and grease upon the history of England. But he found only words of praise for Henry's fiendish successors—Elizabeth, Cromwell and William of Orange, on whom, a later Englishman, Harold Begbie, in a recent book, "The Happy Irish" charge the following crimes:

"It is a fact acknowledged by every historian, high and low, that England having set herself to subdue the Irish without success, screwed herself

to the point of attempting to exterminate these irrepressible neighbors. This is a most important matter to keep in mind. All the pother of these present days has flowed from England's blundered policy of extermination. Our forefathers endeavored to wipe the Irish slate clean of Irishmen. They did not succeed. The remnant which survived the bloody sponge refused to kiss the hand which had clinched itself to erase them.

"The poet, Spencer, has described one after-effect of this policy. Out of every corner of the woods and glens, they came creeping forth upon their hands for their legs could not bear them; they looked like anatomies of death; they speak like ghosts crying out of their graves; they did eat of the dead carrions, happy were they if they could find them; yea, and one another soon after, inso-much as the very carcasses they spared not to scrape out of their graves. * * * In short space there were none almost left, and a most populous and plentiful country suddenly made void of man or beast.

"Sir Arthur Chichester saw some children gnawing at the flesh of their starved mothers; Lecky tells how old women lighted fires to attract children whom they slew and devoured. The English soldiers put to the sword blind and feeble men, women, boys and girls, rich persons, idiots and old people. M. Paul Dubois narrates: In the Desmond country, when all resistance was at end, the soldiers forced the people into old barns which they set on fire putting to the sword any who sought to escape. * * * Soldiers were seen to catch up

children on the point of their swords, making them squirm in the air in their death agony; women were found hanging from the trees with children at their bosoms strangled in the hair of their mothers."

"Not only did the English destroy crops and drive cattle into their own camps that the Irish might be starved, not only this, but they deliberately and with cunning purpose made a great slaughter of infants. The terrible phrase, almost the most terrible phrase in human records. "Nits will be lice" was the laughing murderous, and devilish justification for the slaughter of babes. The steel of English might ran red with the blood of Irish infancy. Lips that had not learned to speak a human word, lips that know nothing more than hang content at the circle of the mother's breast were twitcht with agony, uttered screams of desperate pain, and grew purple in the wrench of violent death. Little feet that had but lately got the trick of balance ran, stumbled, and fell before the smoking swords of most inhuman murderers. Little hands that had but lately learned to fold themselves in prayer were raised in clamorous appeal for mercy to men who smote them down and set their heels on their stricken faces. "Nits will be lice" cried those slaughtering devils, and the beautiful flower of Irish childhood was crusht into the bloody ooze of a land that was like hell. * * * No just Englishman can read that history without a shudder, without an overwhelming sense of shame, without uttering the prayer. Remember not, Lord, our offences, nor the offences of our forefathers. * * * Seven centuries of rapine and violence, carelessness

alternating with ferocity. Not a gleam of humanity, nor of political wisdom, not even the wisdom of peasants, who takes care of his beast, lest it perish. In vain did England plant out in Ireland people from her own shores, and people from the neighbor land of Scotland. In vain to these aliens did she give the rich pastures of Ireland and forbid them to either speak Irish or marry with Irish women.

The rightful children of the soil, the little remnant that had escaped extermination absorbed these invaders into the mysterious spirit of Irish existence. Deprest, broken, crusht, degraded and impoverisht, the faithful remnant did, nevertheless in some most miraculous manner conquer without force of arms these foreign masters and made them more Irish than the Irish. * * * Spencer exclaimed, "Lord, how quickly doth that country alter men's natures."

Charles II.

After Henry VIII the next official fiend appeared when Charles II made Jeffrey, Chief Justice of the Court of King's Bench. Jeffrey has been described by Dickens as a drunken ruffian; a red-faced swollen, bloated, horrible creature, with a bullying, roaring voice, and a more savage nature perhaps than was ever lodged in any human breast; who presided at trials like a great crimson toad, sweltering with rage. Dickens says: "It is astonishing, when we read of the enormous injustice and barbarity of this beast, to know that no one struck him dead on the Justice seat. It was enough for any man or woman to be accused by an enemy, before Jeffrey, to be found guilty of high treason. One man who pleaded not guilty, he ordered taken

out of court upon the instant and hanged, and this so terrified the prisoners in general that they mostly pleaded guilty at once. At Dorchester alone, in the course of a few days, Jeffrey hanged eighty people, besides whipping, transporting, imprisoning and selling as slaves, great numbers. He executed in all 250 or 300. Their execution took place among neighbors and friends of the sentenced, in thirty-six town and villages. Their bodies were mangled, steeped in caldrons of boiling pitch and tar and hung up by the roadsides, over the very churches. The sight and smell of heads and limbs; the hissing and bubbling of the infernal caldrons and the tears and terrors of the people, were dreadful beyond description."

In describing the trial of Sir Walter Raleigh, Dickens sustains the charges of Pocahontas and Joan of Arc, that the British would lie, he says: "Sir Walter Raleigh was tried as unfairly and with as many lies and evasions as the judges and the law officers and every other authority in church and state habitually practiced. The whole court was a great flaunting crowd of debased men and shameless women, among whom were Mrs. Palmer, Moll Davies and Nell Gwyn, who became mothers of future Dukes of England, while the parliament was known as the drunken parliament in consequence of its principal members, seldom being sober."

James II.

"Altho Stewart Kings were on the throne of England, the people of Scotland suffered equal cruelties, supervised by the Duke of York, the King's brother, afterwards James II. Because the

people there would not have bishops, but resolved to stand by their solemn league and covenant, such cruelties were inflicted upon them as make the blood run cold. Ferocious dragoons gallopt thru the country to punish the peasants for deserting the churches; sons were hanged up at their father's door for refusing to disclose where their fathers were concealed; wives were tortured to death for not betraying their husbands; people were taken out of their fields and shot on the public roads without trial; lighted matches were tied to the fingers of the prisoners, and a most horrible torment called the "Boot" was invented and constantly applied, which ground and masht the victim's legs with iron wedges. Witnesses were tortured as well as prisoners. All prisons were full, all gibbets were heavy with bodies, murder and plunder devastated the whole country." (Dickens) .

While these inhuman practices were going on at home, Charles II made war on the Dutch, because they interfered with an English Company established by Queen Elizabeth and Sir John Hawkins, to trade in Spanish gold and African Slaves, of which the King's brother, the Duke of York, was then a leading member. During this war, the Duke's fleet attackt New Netherland, the Dutch colony on the Hudson (being then high admiral) and changed its name to perpetuate his infamous title, before he became James II, the last of a brutish line.

The Duke of York had a most excellent aid in his Scotch cruelties, in William Laud, Archbishop of Canterbury, and a mighty champion of the

Church of England, against the Scotch Convenanters. They imposed fines of a thousand pounds each on Prynne a barrister, Leighton a preacher, and Bostwick a physician. After cropping their ears and slitting their noses, and branding their cheeks, they sent them to prison for life, because they declared bishops to be mere "trumpery, invented by Men." (Dickens).

When some great affliction comes to a people, it is usually alleged to be a visitation of the vengeance of God. This is not our belief. The Beneficent God of Creation, who endowed man with a free will and placed him on earth between two destinies, one of Light, the other of Darkness, with the knowledge that the fiends of Darkness surrounded him day and night to lure him to evil; but from whom he is protected by obedience to the law of his creator; to think, speak and act purely; to be truthful, virtuous and just; to be industrious, respect marriage and shun polygamy and to detest falsehood as the basest, most contemptible and peripicious of vices. These divine precepts, each and all, were for more than six centuries abandoned by the people of England.

That Britain was in the seventeenth century in the service of the King of Darkness, is clearly shown on nearly every page of her history, and especially by the following which we take from Charles Dickens, to whom we have so often referred our readers: "During the great plague which killed a hundred thousand people of London, the debased lords and gentlemen and the shameless ladies danced and gamed and drank, and loved and hated

one another according to their merry ways. The wicked and dissolute, in wild desperation sat in the taverns singing roaring songs and were stricken as they drank and went out and died. The fearful and superstitious persuaded themselves that they saw supernatural sights, burning swords in the sky, gigantic arms and darts. Others pretended that at night, vast crowds of ghosts walked round and round the dismal pits." Horror of horrors. Outside of the Abyss of Duzahk, the dismal abode of the King of Darkness and his demoniac hosts, where in all the universe could ever be found a people, lower in the ways of civilization than the ruling classes of England from the middle of the twelfth to the last quarter of the seventeenth century? The whole nation was socially, morally and intellectually depraved. The poisoned inheritance of William of Normandy, permeated every section of the privileged class, until all became a depraved mass with little hope of a better future. Even now in 1915 A. D., two hundred and fifty years after King James' time, as seen in our chapter on the influence of inheritance, "The English are still a nation of drunkards," shown in 1906 by drunkenness, lust and theft in the Empress Club of London; every one a peeress."

It must be noted that this degradation comes from the so-called nobles, descendants of the Franco-Normans. It is an influence that should be shunned instead of courted by Americans.

CHAPTER X.

THE DISCOVERY AND SETTLEMENT OF AMERICA.

There seems to be in the libraries of Europe authentic manuscript records giving the Irish, Welsh and Norwegians more than a tradition on which to rest their claims that their Pagan ancestors had visited America more than fifteen centuries before Columbus made his voyage of discovery. However, if Columbus was not the first European to visit America he certainly was the divine agent to reveal it to the world. The fact that he was not in quest of a new world, but of shortening a commercial route from Europe to India by sailing directly across the western ocean, should not diminish the luster of his achievement, accomplished, too, while the shadow of the Dark Ages was obscuring the mentality of the so-called wise men and philosophers of the Courts of Europe, who openly sneered and scoffed at his spherical theory of the earth, and predicted his failure.

It matters but very little to the American Race to which European nation credit should now be given for the discovery of this mighty country, but it is of vital importance under the indelible stamp of a moral inheritance, to know and keep in mind the parentage of the people, who, since 1492 redeemed it from a wilderness in possession of a roaming-red-race and fierce animals, and made of it what it is in 1915 the best product of the world's

civilization—the Political, Industrial and Religious Eden of the World.

The Spiritual God of Creation made Columbus his agent, like Moses of old, to lead his scattered Aryan people out of the demoralized nations of Europe, which, under the demons of discord, had become shifting camps of cruel, licentious robbers, where might was right, and justice and morality nowhere.

No self-respecting American today should wish to trace his parentage back to the people who tolerated the human beast, and murderer, Henry VIII, as King for thirty-eight years, without producing some man to raise his hand against him; but instead of striking him down, made him the religious head and teacher of their church. Yet, such are the people who would have their degraded paternity fastened on America.

Previous to the discovery of America by Columbus, man as man, had neither social nor political rights that the patrician rulers of Europe would respect. He had been used as a worthless pawn to be sacrificed at will on the political chessboards of Kings and Emperors. He was forced to contend for his life with his fellow man, and with wild beasts in the arena, to amuse the ruling patricians.

It has been said often, that the darkest hour preceeds the dawn of brightest day. In the fifteenth century, the Pelasgic Civilization of Greece and Rome had nearly disappeared, leaving only fragments of its wonderful art and literature mingled with the ruins of temples and palaces. The beautiful

precepts of the Redeemer were either forgotten or disdainfully ignored by the rulers of Europe. It was, indeed, a very dark hour, but just then, the God of Light, by his agent, Columbus, opened to his chosen Aryan family a new Eden in America, where the best and purest of the old family might reunite, and once more, be dominated by Truth, Faith, Industry and Morality, as were their fathers at the cradle of their race.

At the end of the fifteenth century, the people of England, Ireland, Scotland and Wales, were principally Celts, under a King of Irish-Welsh and Scotch blood, tracing his lineage back six hundred years before Christ to Connereir Mor, King of Ireland. Those of Spain, France, Portugal, Belgium and Switzerland, were an amalgam of Teutonic and Celtic blood. Those of Germany, Austria, Denmark, Sweden, Norway and Holland, were nearly pure Teutons, while those of Russia, Poland and Hungary, were principally Slavs. To these three dominating branches of the Aryan family—Celts, Teutons and Slavs, America owes her parentage and civilization; entirely free from the debasing cowardly blood of the Anglo-Saxon Serfs, who tamely submitted to a degrading bondage for five centuries under the Franco-Norman masters of England.

In looking over the early settlements of America, we find no credit due to the Kings and Emperors of Europe. All who attempted to establish colonies here, attached them to their home feudal system. While they sent their agents here ostensibly in the name of Christianity, to convert

the natives, their real object was to extend their own power and increase their own wealth by acquiring the treasures, as well as the territory of the new world, which was prevented by a beneficent God, inspiring the patriots of 1776.

All of the voyages, following that of Columbus, were made to find a northwest passage to India—the land of Cathay, described by the celebrated Venetian traveler, Marco Polo, as a marvel of riches and wonders. It was a share of those riches and wonders that caused Henry VII, the thrifty Tudor King of England, to commission John Cabot, also a Venetian, and his sons, “at their cost and charges,” to seek for new lands under his banner.

Between 1496 and 1517, the Cabots made three voyages under the English flag, in quest of the supposed Northwest passage to India, and failed. It was said they discovered Labrador and St. John’s Island, and what was said to have been Hudson’s Bay, but they left nothing to support their claims, but the bald assertion of England, whose King deemed their discoveries of so little value, that he allowed Cabot to die in London so neglected that neither the date of his death, nor place of burial is known.

This was the extent of England’s colonization until 1536 when a London merchant, named Hore, attempted a settlement in Newfoundland, and escaped starvation by seizing a French fishing vessel on which his colony returned to England.

To Italy, belongs the sole honor and glory of revealing the New World to the Old, but to Portugal, Holland, Sweden, France and Spain, belong

the credit of sending the earliest explorers and actual settlers.

In 1501, Gasper Contereal, of Portugal, with two vessels, sailed some seven hundred miles along the coast of North America and kidnaped a number of the natives and sold them in Portugal as slaves. In 1512 Ponce de Leon, one of the men who made the voyage with Columbus, after enriching himself by compulsory labor in Porto Rico, set out to find the fabled "Fountain of Youth" and in his quest, discovered and named Florida. His harsh treatment of the natives prevented his settlement in the country. In 1513, Nunez Balboa, of Spain, discovered the Pacific Ocean. In 1504, natives of Brittany, engaged in deep sea fishing, discovered and named Cape Breton on the coast of Newfoundland.

In 1524 Juan Verrazzani, a Florentine, discovered and explored the shores of North Carolina, entered the harbors of New York and Newport, and coasted as far north as the fiftieth degree of latitude.

In 1534, Jacques Cartier, of St. Malo, France, explored the coast of America, crost the Gulf of St. Lawrence, entered a bay which he called Des Chaluers. He then returned to France, but came back the following year with three large ships and a number of colonists, entered the gulf, on St. Lawrence Day, and gave it the name which it still bears. He ascended the river to the Isle of Bacchus, now Orleans; thence to Hochelaga, now Montreal. He wintered at Orleans, but on account of scurvy among the colonists, was compelled to return to France. In 1540, the King furnisht Car-

tier with five vessels and associated with him Robertval as Governor of Canada and Hochelaga. In 1528 Ferdinand de Soto, a companion of Pizarro, the conqueror of Peru, was created Adelantado of Florida by Charles V, and sailed from Havana, with six hundred men, several horses and a herd of swine, in May, 1539. Reaching the west coast of Florida in May, he landed with three hundred men and was attackt by a large body of natives and forct to retire. He then marcht several hundred miles to the mouth of the Mobile River, passing numerous Indian towns. He outraged the natives and provokt a conflict in which two thousand of the natives and twenty of his own men and forty horses, were slain. Numbers of his men afterwards died from wounds. He burned the village and retreated to Chicaca in the Chickasaw's country, where he remained until March 1541 and resumed his march thru the Indian country in a vain quest for mountains of gold and fountains for renewing life. In April he discovered the Mississippi River which he crost, still in search of the wealth and the youth giving waters, which the Goddess of Spanish fable promist her sons in Florida, but always vanishing, beyond the next mountain or stream, until the pursuers sank from disappointment into the charitable arms of death; so died the celebrated De Soto on the banks of the Mississippi, May 25, 1542. To conceal De Soto's death his body was wrapt in a mantle and in the stillness of midnight silently sunk in the middle of the stream. Leaving to the cold, mute stars, the duty of watching over his unmarkt grave. The remnant of his expedition floated

away on the waves of the Mississippi to its mouth, to join a Spanish settlement near the present site of Tampico, and gave Spain, under the name of Florida, a claim on the entire coast of America as far as Newfoundland, tho no settlement then existed north of Mexico.

The demon of Darkness and his agents of discord in Europe, sub-divided the Roman Branch of the Church of Christ into numerous bitter factions. The banners of the Prince of Peace and Good Will to Men were everywhere stained with the blood of innocent men, women and children; while the pure air of God was poluted by the fumes of human flesh roasting over fires kindled by profest ministers of the Gospels, who claimed to be the only true representatives of Christ, with mandates to crucify and exterminate all others, with fire, sword, ax, dagger and gibbet.

To escape the fury of this demoniacal discord, the Huguenots of France, sought a peaceful home in America. In 1562 Jean Ribault with two ships arrived in Florida with a colony, closely followed by the demons of European destruction. Ribault left twenty-six to found a Christian settlement and returned to France for supplies, but those entrusted with the colony became discouraged, mutinied and killed their commander. When nearly starved the remaining few were picked up by an English vessel and landed, part in France, the rest in England.

Religious wars fiercely raging in France, prevented Ribault from obtaining the needed supplies and additions to his colony, but Laudonniere a companion was sent out by Coligny with three

ships. He landed in June 1564 at what is now St. John's River and built a fort, but like the colony of Ribault, this too, mutinied and sent out a piratical expedition which captured two Spanish vessels, thus becoming the first aggressors in America. The colony was about abandoning the settlement for want of provisions, when relieved by Sir John Hawkins, Elizabeth's notorious slave merchant. Ribault arrived in August with abundant supplies of all kinds.

Phillip II, of Spain, sent out Pedro Melendez, to conquer and occupy for Spain and drive out the French both as intruders and heretics. Melendez sailed in July with some three hundred soldiers and over two thousand volunteers. They sighted the coast of Florida on St. Augustine's day, and named the inlet which they entered two days after, St. Augustine, and located the town, which is the oldest in North America by forty years.

The demon King of Spain issued orders to his subjects, in the name of the gentle and forgiving Christ, to exterminate men of his own race, not because they were Frenchmen, but because they were heretics and enemies of God. And for this fell purpose placed in their hands a Christian banner enscribed "Death to The Huguenots." On the approach of Melendez's fleet, Ribault's vessels put to sea to attack the Spaniards, but the demons of the air in a violent storm flung them helpless upon the shore. Melendez marched thru forests and swamps to St. Augustine, surprised the French forts and obeying the orders of his master, indiscriminately butchered men, women and children, only a

few escaping to the woods. Ribault and his shipwreck companions half famisht, returned to their fort to find it in the hands of the Spaniards. Relying on the word of honor of the perfidious Melendez, they gave themselves up and were massacred with shocking barbarity. Their mangled limbs were hung on trees with the inscription—"Not because they are Frenchmen, but because they are heretics and enemies of God."

The King of France to whom the widows and orphans of the murdered French appealed for redress failed to give them even an answer, but Gourgues, a brave Gascon, with his own private means, equipt three small vessels, with eighty sailors and one hundred and fifty troops, and hastened to answer the cry of the French orphans and widows. Sailing to Florida he gained the assistance of the natives, attackt three Spanish forts defended by four hundred men, and out of sixty defending the first fort, only fifteen escapt. All in the second were slain. From the third a company attempting a sally, were intercepted and slain, the survivors all led away prisoners, with the fifteen who escapt from the first fort, and hanged on the same trees on which Melendez had hung the French; and the following declaration placed over the bodies: "I do not do this as unto Spaniards or mariners, but as unto traitors, robbers and murderers." Not having forces enough to man and hold the forts, they were razed. Gourgues then returned to France, in May, 1568. Had Charles IX defended Ribault, and his Florida colony, as a wise ruler should have done, France would have secured

an American Empire, covering the Gulf States, the valleys of the Mississippi and the St. Lawrence Rivers, with their tributaries, before England had a single spot on the Continent. But the poison of contending creeds destroyed his mental vision, gave Florida to Spain and deprived France of the glory of owning the richest and most desirable country in the world.

In 1598 a commission was obtained by Marquis de la Roch of Brittany to take possession of Canada and other neighboring countries "Not possest by any Christian Prince," but his attempt failed. After his death in 1600 Chauvin, a naval officer, and Pontgrave, a merchant of St. Malo, engaged profitably in the Canadian fur trade. In 1603 a company of Rouen merchants and the celebrated Champlain, was sent out to explore the vicinity of Quebec. In 1604 De Monts, a Huguenot, with four ships came as governor of Arcadia, from the fortieth to the forty-sixth degrees of north latitude. That is, from about Philadelphia to Cape Breton, with a monopoly of the fur trade. Poutrincourt, an officer of the expedition, obtained permission to remain in the harbor, which he called Port Royal, now Annapolis. Champlain explored the Bay of Fundy; discovered and named the River St. John's, the Island and River of St. Croix; laid the foundation of Quebec and was the first white man to enter the beautiful lake which bears his name and perpetuates his fame. He establisht French authority on the St. Lawrence and laid claim to vast interior basins, of North America, which with Canada and Arcadia, he named New France. Champlain died in 1635.

Credit must be given to the French for the only serious effort made to convert the Indians to Christianity, tho all others profest that to be among their leading objects.

New Netherland.

Hendrick Hudson, who had made two voyages in the employ of London merchants in quest of a northwest passage to Cathay and not meeting with encouragement, accepted service with the Dutch East India Company, under the flag of Holland. In April, 1609, he was placed in command of the Half-Moon, a vessel of only eighty tons. After contending with the ice of the Northern sea, he skirted the coast of Arcadia, entered Penobscot Bay, rounded Cape Cod and entered Chesapeake and Delaware Bays; and, on September 2, discovered and entered Sandy Hook Bay, and on the Eleventh, past thru the Narrows and the next day, began the voyage of the river that now perpetuates his fame. He ascended as far as the present City of Albany, describing the country along the river's banks as being "As beautiful land as one can tread upon." Descending the river, he sailed for home October 4 and a little more than a month later arrived at Dartmouth, England, where he with his vessel was detained by the government. After eight months delay, the Half-Moon was allowed to continue its voyage to Holland, but by a royal order, Hudson was brought back to the English service and fitted out for a fourth voyage from which he never returned. Evidently the records of his discoveries in the service of Holland were safer in Hudon's brain, beneath the cold waves, than they would have

been to English interests if delivered to the Dutch East India Company. Officially, or otherwise, he was cruelly turned adrift in the bay that bears his name, to seal his lips by perishing in its frozen waters.

As it was, the Holland Company claimed the lands discovered by its agent. The States General granted a four year's monopoly to an Amsterdam Company who sent out five ships. Adrian Block, one of the company, extended the Dutch sphere by way of East River, ran thru Hell Gate, and traced the Shores of Long Island, and the Coast of Connecticut, as far as Cape Cod. In 1621 the monopoly to the Amsterdam Merchants past to the Dutch East India Company, who were given the exclusive privilege of traffic and colonizing on the coasts of Africa and America. This wealthy Dutch Corporation combined military and commercial interests, maintaining chambers in the five principal Dutch Cities, which were managed by a board of directors, called the Assembly of Nineteen. New Netherland was in charge of the Amsterdam Chamber.

Cornelius Jacobson May was the first Director of New Netherland. He built Fort Nassau on the Delaware and Fort Orange on the Hudson, where Albany now stands. A number of Walloons denied the privilege of locating in Virginia came out with May and settled on the northwest corner of Long Island at what is now Wallabout. In May 1626 Peter Minuet arrived as director-general. Manhattan Island was purchast from the Indians for about \$24.00. A block house surrounded by a palisade was built at the southermost point and called Fort

Amsterdam. Staten Island was also purchast from the Indians. In 1629 the Assembly of nineteen, to increase and strengthen the colonies, offered any member of the company who might establish in any part of New Netherland, within four years after the notice of his intention, a colony of fifty persons upward of fifteen years of age, the title of Patroon, and a grant of territory sixteen miles in extent, along the sea shore, or the bank of some navigable river, or eight miles where both banks were occupied, with an indefinite extent inland; but reserved the Island of Manhattan and the fur trade with the Indians to the company. The patroons were to pay five percentum on trade carried on by them and extinguish the Indian titles, and settle their land with tenant farmers having indentured servants like those in Virginia. Free settlers who emigrated at their own expense were allowed as much land as they could cultivate, and settlers of every description were to be free of taxes for ten years. The colonists were not allowed to make woolen, linen or cotton cloth, or weave any stuff, on pain of being banisht as perjurers. This, to keep them dependent on the mother country for manufactured goods.

The scheme was a success. Members of the company selected and purchast the most desirable locations. Those on Deleware Bay named their settlement Swansdale. Those on the Hudson opposite Manhattan Island named their location Pavonia. Van Rensselaer settled in the vicinity of Fort Orange, on a tract twenty-four miles long and forty-eight broad, and named it Rensselaerwyck. De Vries

settled a colony near Swansdale where Lewiston now stands.

As was natural the assembly of nineteen at Amsterdam found fault with Minuet, for favoring the Patroons, with whom he worked in harmony, and ordered him to return to Holland. Stress of weather forced his vessel, with a cargo of furs, into Plymouth Harbor, where he was detained as an interloper on English territory, by reason of Hudson's discovery, tho in the service of Holland when made.

In December 1632 De Vries returned to Holland for supplies, but on his return not one of his colony could be found; all were destroyed by the Indians. He next settled on Staten Island. In 1623 Wouter Van Twiller succeeded Minuet as Director-General, bringing with him, over one hundred soldiers, also, two most essential additions to civilization a school-master, and a clergyman named Bogardus. To secure a valuable trade which had grown up during an intercourse of many years with the Indians, the Dutch Company purchast from the Pequods a tract visited years before by Block on the west bank of the Connecticut River, near where Hartford now stands, and built a trading house which was fortified with cannon and named the House of Good Hope. This rapid progress of Dutch settlers, displeased the English Colony, which only lately—1620, located at Plymouth Rock and drew from John Winthrop its new governor just arrived from London a protest claiming the territory for England.

New Sweden.

In 1637 a colony of Swedes in two vessels ap-

peared in Delaware Bay, under command of Minuet who had been director of New Netherland. This colony purchast land of the Indians near the head of the bay and built a fort called Christiana, in honor of the Queen of Sweden. Printz, the governor, establisht his residence and built a fort near where Philadelphia is now. Thus, Pennsylvania was first settled by Swedes. The Delaware country from the ocean to the falls near Princeton was known as New Sweden. While at enmity with the Dutch in all other things the Swedes joined with them in keeping out the English as disturbers, who attempted a settlement within their limits. All who came were either driven out or compelled to submit to Swedish authority.

Virginia.

England made no serious attempts at colonizing America until 1583, ninety-one years after its discovery, when Sir Humphrey Gilbert received a despotic charter from Queen Elizabeth constituting him Lord-Proprietor over what he might discover, with unlimited powers over life and property, on condition that a fifth part of the gold and silver ore found should go to the crown and the lands be held of the crown by homage, which was simply a desire to fasten feudalism upon America.

With a fleet of five ships and barks and a large body of men, Gilbert sailed from Falmouth in June 1583 and reacht Newfoundland early in August, which he took possession of in the name of Elizabeth. He then steered south to bring the whole land within his patent, but the mutiny and dirorder of his sailors causing him the loss of one

of his ships and nearly a hundred of his men, with the admiral's papers, Gilbert resolved to return home. At midnight on September ninth, his own vessel, being overloaded with artillery and deck hamper, disappeared under the great rolling waves. All was lost; only one of his vessels reached Falmouth with tidings of the disaster.

Gilbert's half brother, Sir Walter Raleigh, received a new charter from Elizabeth, fully as ample and despotic as the one bestowed on his lost brother. Desiring to locate in a milder climate Raleigh fitted out two ships under Philip Amidas and Arthur Barlow, to find a suitable location. They sailed in April 1584, reached the Carolinas in July and after ranging the coast for one hundred and twenty miles, took possession of the Island of Wovoon, then returned home in September.

In order that our readers may understand and fully appreciate the simple and inoffensive character of the Indians found on the eastern coast of America by these early English adventurers, we copy from a report made by Richard Hakluyt, D. D. the Welsh member of the London Company, its historian and chaplain on the voyage of location under Philip Amidas and Arthur Barlow in April 1584; and that for settlement under Sir Richard Grenville and Governor Ralph Lane in 1585. Hakluyt in describing the new country says: "The soil is the most plentiful, sweete, fruitfull and wholesome of all the worlde; there are above fourteen severall sweete smelling timber treese, and the most part of their underwoods are bayes and such

like; they have two okes that we have, but farre greater and better."

Then he says of the Indians: "After they had been divers times aboard our shipp, myself, with seven more, went twenty miles into the river that runneth toward the City of Skicqok, which river they call Occom; and the evening following, we came to an island, which they call Roanoke, distance from the harbour by which we entered, seven leagues; and at the north end there was a village of nine houses, built of cedar and fortified round about with sharp trees to keep out their enemies, and the entrance into it made like a turnepike, very artificially; when we came toward it, standing neere unto the water's side, the wife of Granganimo, the King's brother, came running out to meet us very cheerfully, and friendly; her husband was not then in the village; some of her people shee commanded to draw our boat on shore for the beating of the billoe, others she appointed to cary us on their backes to the dry ground, and others to bring oares into the house for fear of stealing. When we were come into the outter roome, having five roomes in her house, she caused us to sit down by a great fire, and after tooke off our clothes and washed them, and dried them againe; some of the women plucked off our stockings, and washed them, some washed our feete in warm water, and she herself tooke great pains to see all things ordered in the best manner she could, making great haste to dress some meate for us to eate. * * * We were entertained with all love and kindness, and with as much bountie, after their manner, as they could

possibly devise. We found the people most gentle, loving and faithful, void of guile and treason, and such as live after the manner of the Golden Age. * * * When we departed in the evening, and would not tarry all night, she was very sorry and gave us into our boate our supper half dressed, pottes and all, and brought us to our boate side in which we lay all night, removing the same a prettie distance from the shoare; Shee preseiving our jealousy, was much grieved, and sent divers men and thirtie women to sit all night on the bank, side by us, and sent us into our boates five mattes, to cover us from the rain, using many words to intreat us to rest in their houses; but because we were fewe men, and if we had miscarried the voyage had been in very grate danger, we durst not adventure any thing, although there was no cause of doubt, for more kind and loving people, there cannot be found in the worlde, as far as we have hitherto had triall."

This was written before the crimes of the British against the confiding Indians, made it necessary to slander them.

Charmed with their hospitable treatment, the enchanting scenery, rich soil, sweet smelling trees and shrubs, and large oaks, Amidas and Barlow, hastened back to England taking with them two of the natives, Wanchese and Manteo. Raleigh was in raptures over the report, and the Queen desired the new region should be called Virginia, in honor of the virgin Queen of England.

Seven vessels carrying one hundred and eight colonists sailed from Plymouth in April 1585, under

command of Sir Richard Grenville, accompanied by the two Indians taken over by Amidas and Barlow, also by Ralph Lane as governor of the colony. They reached the proposed settlement on the twenty-sixth of June and sent a party with Manteo ashore, who had scarcely reached land when the brutal and despotic nature of Britain in dealing with weak or defenseless people, displayed itself in rash and cruel conduct toward the Indians who had been so kind to the eight Englishmen who had visited their country the preceeding July, but the eight in the first visit, were now one hundred and eight.

One had lost a silver cup and because there was delay in its return, Grenville ordered the Indian town and corn to be burned after the people had fled. Grenville remained only long enough to collect a cargo of pearls and skins owned by the Indians; then returned with the spoils to England, taking by the way a Spanish vessel, richly laden. He was received at Plymouth as a hero.

Ralph Lane was now in supreme command and fully as cruel and avaricious as Grenville had shown himself. The Indians smarting under the unprovoked cruelty that destroyed their homes and corn, and pillaged their pearls and skins, were anxious to get rid of the new settlers whom they now both hated and feared. Secret combinations were formed to destroy or drive them out. One of the chiefs intimated to Lane that pearls, valuable minerals and skins could be found further up the Roanoke. An exploring party sent in quest of the riches resulted most disastrously. The boats made slow progress against the swift current. The river's banks were

deserted and no provisions could be obtained; their two mastiffs were killed, out of which a pottage of dog and sassafras was made on which the hungry wealth-seekers lived two days. While using the "dogge's porridge," on their return to the mouth of the river, the Indians appeared in a threatening manner. Lane reached Roanoke in a famisht and dispirited condition having lived nearly two days on "sassafras without the animal seasoning." His eager and vehement desire of gaining sudden and great wealth being now baffled he sought a friendly English interview with Wingina, the most active of the chiefs, and treacherously murdered all within his reach. The provisions brought from England were exhausted, leaving the colony in great straits, but they were saved and taken to England on the pirate ships of Sir Francis Drake in June 1586. After a year of crime and merited disappointment, the settlement at Roanoke was abandoned.

In 1603 when James VI of Scotland became James I of England, more than a hundred years after the voyage of the Cabots not a single Englishman remained in the New World. But glowing reports were reaching London about Spanish and Portuguese peasants "making pleasant, prosperous and golden voyages to satisfy their fame-thirsty and gold-thirsty minds, with that reputation and wealth which made all misadventures seem tolerable unto them." Such reports with the pirate voyages of Drake and Hopkins in quest of Spanish gold and African slaves, and a recent account publisht in Paris by Hakluyt about the discovery of Florida, aroused the cupidity of London merchants to renew

colonizing. James I, in 1606 authorized a London and Plymouth company to plant colonies in America between the thirty-fourth and forty-fifth degrees, north latitude. The London Company was assigned the southern part from Cape Fear to the Potomac in which to establish its colony. The Plymouth Company was given the northern part from the mouth of the Hudson to Newfoundland.

In April 1607 three vessels and one hundred and five, so-called gentlemen, under Christopher Newport of the Plymouth Colony, were driven by a storm into Chesapeake Bay, fifty miles from the mouth of the Powhatan River and founded a settlement which they called Jamestown, and the river, James River, in honor of King James I. Bitter discords arose on the voyage among the gentlemen, which continued during the subsequent colonial period, passing from colony to colony. The Jamestown settlement was saved from utter ruin by John Smith who opposed its abandonment after more than half of their number had died for want of food, being too shiftless to produce it. The Indians remembering the cruelties inflicted on them by the Roanoke settlement of 1586 refused to give the new colony any assistance, but would have destroyed it, were it not for Pocohontas, daughter of Powhatan, who revealed the plot and time fixt for the massacre; to be afterward paid for her humane act by being kidnapped from her father by Captain Samuel Argal "Deputy-Governor of the Settlement and Admiral of the Country and neighboring high seas." Argal was the rapacious and sanctimonious tyrant, who condemned white members of the

colony to slavery, for non-attendance at church. It was his ship, and not a Dutch ship, that brought the first negro slaves to America and sold them to the English planters. He had kidnapped them while on a pirate cruise to the West Indies, which nearly caused a war with Spain. Afterward his countrymen to be rid of the foul stain charged the crime to their Dutch neighbors. But at falsifying records, the British were experts. Long, long ago, they turned away from the moral teachings of their Aryan fathers who detested falsehood as the basest, the most contemptible and the most pernicious of vices. This demoniacal and malicious vice colors all English literature. When Pocahontas met John Smith in London, three years after her marriage to John Rolph, among other reproofs alleged against him was this—"Your countrymen will lie much." Joan of Arc, advised her countrymen to beware of them because "The King of Heaven knows that they (English) speak falsely." This national vice evidently was inherited from Robert the Devil, father of William the Conqueror. While Robert was of the Teutonic race he possest none of its morality, nor the high sense of honor noted thruout history in all the German tribes. The bastard inheritance of William of Normandy gave a low moral tone to his English government, which has been by inheritance transmitted from King to King, producing in its downward course the human viper, Henry VIII; then down the line, from Queen to Queen, to later Kings and Oliver Cromwell god of puritanism. Nor has the moral tone of the English government been improved since the saintly days of Henry and

Cromwell. It is still visible in its brazen-faced diplomacy with other nations, and never more so than since July, 1898, in its schemes under the guise of friendship, using the blood-money of Cecil Rhodes and Andrew Carnegie, to destroy the Republic of George Washington.

We refer to this British inherited vice, in order to impress upon the youths of America, the importance of knowing and appreciating the parentage of the patriots who founded the American Republic; and to all say, when you hear the Siren-damsels of the British Isles, sing their deluding songs of an Anglo-Saxon paternity for your country, do not forget your immortal Washington and your country, and like the Siran-victims of old, die in an ecstasy of delight—but look well for the approach of insidious dangers. Compare the pure lives of Washington and the patriots of 1776, and their liberal government, with the life of William of Normandy and those of his robber barons and Saxon serfs and their degrading system of government; then be thankful that you are Americans of the truth-telling, liberal race of freemen.

In 1607 Christopher Newport returned to England for immigrants and provisions and came back with one hundred and twenty immigrants, the greater number of whom were adventurers of the vagabond, gentleman class—idle, vicious and dissolute; unfit associates for men like Bartholomew Gosnold and John Smith. In the absence of Newport half of the first arrivals died including Gosnold. Winfield, the president of the council, escaped with

the best provisions in a small vessel left by Newport, and Ratcliff his successor proved no better.

. In September 1608 Newport brought out seventy immigrants, among them two women the first white women in the colony. In June 1609 Newport brought out five hundred immigrants more vicious than any preceding them; within six months, only sixty of them were alive. When Gates, Somers, and Newport, company commissioners arrived in June 1610 they found the remnant of the settlers on the verge of starvation. Gates resolved to abandon the place, sail to Newfoundland and distribute the survivors among the English fishermen. They left in four small vessels, but on the next day, met English ships with more immigrants and provisions, sent by Lord Deleware the New Governor. Gates went to England and returned in September 1611 with three hundred immigrants, most of whom were sober, and industrious. Up to this the community system prevailed where everything was in common the industrious providing food for the lazy, but that was now abandoned. A few acres of land were assigned to each man for his exclusive use which soon provided ample food for all.

In the beginning of 1618 there were one thousand men in the Virginia Colony, but no families. In 1619 George Yeardley became governor. He abolisht martial law and releast the planters from feudal service; also gave the people a voice in the government, and on June 28, 1619 convened the first representative assembly ever held in America, at Jamestown. Inside of two years, one hundred and fifty reputable young women were sent over to be-

come wives of the planters and mothers of Virginia. Sir Edward Sands, treasurer, sent out twelve hundred immigrants, among whom were ninety young women, who became wives of the planters, on paying the company a hundred pounds of tobacco, worth about seventy-five dollars for each woman. This year the King outraged the colony by sending out a hundred dissolute vagabonds, pickt out of the jails of London and sold them as servants for a term of years, thus introducing the system of indentured servants which continued for more than a century, tho objected to by the colonists. The example of the King was improved on by Captian Argal, who kidnapped negroes from the Spanish West Indies and sold them as slaves to the planters.

This was the introduction of Negro slavery which is falsely charged in English history to the Dutch. When English writers made this false charge they knew that Queen Elizabeth and Sir John Hawkins, whom she made treasurer of her navy in 1573, and knighted in 1588, were engaged as partners in the African slave trade for many years. In fact, they were the first of the English to engage in that degrading business. The slave trade was continued by the government after the death of Elizabeth. In 1713 it held a monopoly of the business and was under contract with Spain to supply the Spanish Colonies with African Slaves, and when Spain annulled the contract, England declared war. Before the American revolution, England forct 2,130,000 slaves on the American and Spanish Colonies. It was one of the crimes alleged by Jefferson in the Declaration of Independence.

In 1620 the Earl of Southampton succeeded Sands as treasurer and in two years sent out twenty three hundred immigrants; and a few Italians and Dutch mechanics to instruct them in making glass, pitch, tar, potash, flax, silk and wine, considered more profitable than tobacco, then the only staple, which had overstockt the market.

In 1621 Sir Francis Wyatt superseded Yeardley as governor and was instructed to restrict the cultivation of tobacco, and if possible, gain the good will of the Indians who had been treated with contempt by the colonists, but it was too late. Powhatan was dead; his successor Openchancanough, had been nursing vengeance and biding his time to strike. On March 22, 1622, he gave the signal. Every settlement was attackt. Men, women and children were slaughtered without mercy. Three hundred and fifty perisht, including six of the council in the first attack. All would have perisht had not Chanco, a converted Indian given warning the night before the massacre. The savage war continued for about fourteen years. Peace was secured and the white men soon regained their wonted superiority over the red race, and the Indians entrapt by lying promises of security and immunity, were slain without mercy. The Indian war reduced the colonists from four thousand to twenty-five hundred, who were in little better condition than indentured servants to the company, who retained the supreme direction of affairs in London.

King James took possession of the records of the company in London; after a pretended investigation, the charter was declared forfeited and the company

dissolved. All rights and privileges returned to the King from whom they flowed. The end of the London Company and the death of King James, took place in 1625.

New England.

The preaching of Wickliffe, Luther, Calvin and other reformers, with the bitter controversy between Henry VIII and the Pope, produced in the sixteenth century, bitterness among British Christians about creeds and modes of worship, resulting in wars of extermination by ax and flame; which made a home among the Indians in the forests of America, safer for men, women and children, than anything that Europe could offer them. James I, son of the murdered Queen of Scots, a victim of the religious war, came to the throne of England in 1603, believing and asserting his divine right to absolute rule in both church and state.

James I, disliked the Catholics as heartily as did Elizabeth, but he had a special hatred for the English sect called Puritans, who had planted themselves on the open bible as the only safe chart and guide in religious and civil duties; hence, they in turn, hated James and his church. But James and his church made it so uncomfortable for the Puritans in England, that they sought shelter in Holland where they established a church in the city of Amsterdam; and made application to become members of the New Netherland Colony, lately established in America. Being refused, they next applied to the Virginia Company for admission to its Colony, with the privilege of toleration in religious worship, but the Episcopal service of the

church of England being the establisht religion of that colony, the heads of the church denied their application. Finally, thru the influence of Elder Bruster of the Scroby non-conformists, a patent was received from the Virginia Company of London in 1619 and tho considered of little value, Bruster arranged with some London capitalists, as sort of partners in a business enterprise, to supply the funds enabling the Puritans in England and Holland to sail for the New World.

Having been refused admittance to the Virginia and the Holland Colonies, they desired to find a location between them. On November 9, 1620, the Mayflower on which they sailed sighted land, but a raging gale forct them to cast anchor in the shelter of Cape Cod harbor, which was north of where they expected to locate. As insubordination was developing among the members, it was deemed safer to land than longer to endure the discomforts of an overcrowded vessel.

John Carver was chosen governor, and the men, who with the women and childern numbered one hundred and one, signed "In the Presence of God and one of another," a covenant to "enact, constitute and frame such just and equal laws, ordinances, acts, constitutions, offices, from time to time, as shall be thought most meet and convenient for the general good of the colony."

Before disembarking an exploring party was sent out to fix upon some spot for settlement near a good harbor. It was December 21 before the company was all landed at the foot of a rocky hill overlooking the bay. This, they called Plymouth Rock and

the settlement New Plymouth in honor of their port of departure from England. In three months, half of the colony, including Governor Carver and the wives of Standish and Bradford, were dead.

In April 1621 the Mayflower returned to England. A party explored Massachusetts Bay for a distance of forty miles northward. Thirty-five new members without provisions came in November in charge of a man named Cushman, thus adding to the distress of the colony. In 1622 Weston, one of the London capitalists who equipt the Mayflower being dissatisfied with its pecuniary results, sent out sixty indentured servants of the meanest character, to found a settlement of his own. These after intruding upon the Plymouth Colony for three months, eating and stealing half their provisions attempted a settlement on the South Shore of Massachusetts Bay, calling it Wissagussat. Having no provisions they plundered the Indians who resolved to cut them off. Hearing of the plot from Massasoit, a dying sachem, Captain Standish made a sudden attack on the Indian camp slaughtered a number of them including Wituwamot their chief; then as suddenly abandoned the Wissagusset settlement. The only regret expressed by the Puritans for this murder was that some had not been first converted.

In 1623 Sir Ferdinando Gorges obtained a grant of territory extending nearly from Salem to Canada, which he named Laconia and established the villages, Portsmouth and Dover, which for years remained mere fishing stations. Gorges' son, Robert, obtained a grant of ten miles square on the northern shores of Massachusetts Bay and the appointment of

Leutenant General of New England for himself, and that of Admiral for Francis West, to prevent unauthorized trading within the limits of his patent. The London Company sent out with young Gorges, two clergymen, named Morrell and Lyford; the first in the colony. Lyford, being of the Church of England, was expelled by the Puritans together with his followers, but they started a new settlement at the entrance to Boston Harbor.

In 1627 the joint stock business was abandoned by the London Merchants selling their interests to the colonists. In 1628 Endicott obtained a patent from King Charles embracing Massachusetts Bay and the country westward. On this he established a colony from Old Boston, in Lincolnshire, England, and incorporated as the Governor and Company of Massachusetts Bay in New England.

Endicott's colony were members of the Church of England, but he desired to establish an independent church without the Liturgy. Two brothers named Brown, insisting that the service of the English Church be fully carried out, tho among the original patentees, were shipped off to England as factious, where their complaints were ignored. Their expulsion gave notice to Europe that New England would neither practice nor tolerate any system of worship not approved by themselves.

This intolerant spirit came to the Puritans, as an inheritance from their English fathers. It forced them to go to Holland for shelter, before coming to America, but now when the power was in their own hands, they hastened to apply its sting to Roger Williams, to the Hutchinson family, to Samuel

Gordon and his religionists, whose property they confiscated in the name of God, to Mary Fisher and Jane Auston deemed "possest by the devil," to the judicial murder of the Quakers William Robinson, Marmaduke Stephenson, Mary Dyer, William Laddra, Wenlock Christison, to Mary Jones for the malignant touch of a witch and riding thru the air on a broom stick, to the Widow Anne Hibbins, a witch, to the Indian Woman Tibuta and an unnamed Irish woman, Goodman Proctor and wife Elizabeth, Sarah Good, Rebecca Nurse, John Willard and many others, all executed as witches.

Among the last victims was the preacher Burroughs, who died repeating the Lord's prayer, which drew tears from the spectators and was declared to be an impossibility for a witch. The Lord's prayer by a victim proved to be the chief means of ending the diabolical craze. There had been more than twenty executed, eight still under conviction, and more than a hundred in jail waiting trial. Those convicted were tried by a court of five judges, presided over by Lieutenant Governor Stoughton, and the prosecutions prest by Cotton Mather and his son Increas Mather, with a number of so-called ministers of the Gospel assisting. It was the official Puritanism of the Pilgrim Fathers, to whom credit has been given by historians and orators, for introducing religious and political liberty in America; the progenitors of the men who aided the British with blue light signals in the war of 1812 and of those who now earnestly work with Earl Grey and Andrew Carnegie, to reunite America and England under the flag of St. George.

The descendants of those crazy, fanatical Puritans were Tories in the days of Washington, traitors in the war of 1812 and are now playing the part of traitors and trailers in the farce pageant proposed by Earl Gray for 1914 and 1915 in honor of a false pretense that peace and good will have existed between England and America since the treaty of Ghent in 1814; wholly ignoring the entire destruction of American commerce by English built, manned and armed privateers, between 1861 and 1865, a veiled war more destructive to American interests than an open war would have been, officially admitted by England paying to America, fifteen and a half million dollars for the direct damage. In fact, neither the Pilgrims of Plymouth Rock, nor their descendants, were ever real Americans; they remained what their fathers were when they landed from the Mayflower, servile subjects of British Masters, the refuse of the Virginia and the New Netherland colonies.

CHAPTER XI. CREATING THE REPUBLIC.

After the unprovoked aggressions of the Duke of York on New Netherland, the feudal lords of England and France waged an intermitting war for more than a century for the exclusive possession of the Atlantic shores of North America. Finally, in 1763, the lords of England became the dominating force from the Atlantic to the Mississippi River; and from the Gulf of Mexico to the lake of the woods and Hudson's Bay. This vast domain was won for England by the lavish expenditure of 30,000 lives and \$16,000,000 by the colonists, who soon found that during the last years of the contest the Lords of Britain were devising means to use the French Catholics in Canada to reduce Americans to a servile condition in order that a few in London might bask in lustful pleasure and idleness under military protection, as they have since done in India and Africa, at the expense of America.

But the Spiritual God of Creation inspired His chosen people of America to assert the inalienable rights of men with which He had endowed their fathers to continue their lives of truth, morality, industry and justice, to demand from despotic idlers the fruits of their own industry and skill, and the management of their civic affairs without foreign masters.

The Spiritual God of Creation who inspired Zoroaster to reveal to the Aryan family, His moral

precepts on the Iranie Plateau, and caused them to be repeated more than six thousand years afterwards to a degraded and demoralized world by Christ Jesus on the Mount of Jerusalem, was now inspiring the brave farmers of America to assert a political creed, harmonizing with the beneficent teachings of Zoroaster and of Christ.

The John-the-Baptist of this new creed was James Otis a son of Massachusetts of whom, John Adams said: "He was the flame of fire that lit the lamp of American independence and sowed the seed of patriots and heroes to defend it and keep it burning fifteen years before the Declaration of Independence, by a torrent of impetuous eloquence in a speech delivered in the old town hall, of Boston, before the superior court of the province of Massachusetts Bay, in February, 1761, while unsuccessfully resisting George the Third's Writs of Assistance as illegal and tyrannical."

At the time the writs were applied for Mr. Otis was occupying the office of Advocate General to the Crown, and had been requested by a member of the court to examine the question of the legality of their issue, which he did. When the application came up for a hearing Mr. Ottis said: "I take this opportunity to declare, that, whether under fee or not, for in such a case as this I despise a fee, I will to my dying day oppose with all the powers and faculties God has given me, all such instruments of slavery on the one hand, and villainy on the other, as this writ of assistance is.

He stated that he was solicited to argue the cause as Advocate General, and because he would not, was

charged with dersestion from duty, to which he replied that he renounced the office and would argue the cause in the interest of the people on the same principles. "The only principles of public conduct worthy of a gentleman or a man, are to sacrifice estate, ease, health and applause, and even life, to the sacred calls of his country." "These manly sentiments in private life, make the good citizen; in public life, the patriot and hero. I do not say that, when brought to the test, I shall be invincible. I pray God that I may never be brought to the melancholy trial; but if ever I should, it will be then known how far I can reduce to practice, principals, which I know to be founded in truth."

"Every man, merely natural, was an independent sovereign, subject to a law written in his own heart, and revealed to him by his Maker as the constitution of his nature, and the inspiration of his understanding and his conscience. His right to his life, his liberty, no created being rightfully contest. Nor was his right to his property less incontestable. The club that he had snapt from a tree for a staff or for defense was his own; if by a pebble he had killed a partridge or a squirrel, it was his own. No creature, man or beast, had a right to take it from him. If he had taken an eel, or a smelt, or a sculpion, it was his property. These rights were inherent and inalienable; they never could be surrendered or alienated but by idiots or madmen, and all acts of idiots and lunatics were void and not obligatory by all the laws of God and man."

"It was inconsistent with the dignity of human nature to say that men were gregarious animals,

like wild geese; it surely could offend no delicacy to say they were social animals by nature; that there were natural sympathies; and above all, the sweet attractions of the sexes, which must soon draw them together in little groups, and by degrees in larger congregations for mutual assistance and defense. And this must have happened before any formal covenant, by exprest words or signs, was concluded. When general councils and deliberations commenct, the objects could be no other than the mutual defense and security of every individual for his life, his liberty and his property. To suppose them to have surrendered these in any other way than by equal rules and general consent, was to suppose them idiots or madmen, whose acts were never binding. To suppose them surprised by fraud or compelled by force into any other compact, such fraud and such force could confer no obligation. Every man had a right to trample it under foot whenever he pleased. Rights derived from the author of nature are inherent and unalienable and indefeasible by any laws, pacts, contracts, covenants or stipulations which man could devise."

This brilliant and fearless mind was shattered in 1769 by the blow of a bludgeon in the hands of one John Robertson, a British commissioner of the customs, who led a cowardly band of assassins, composed of British army and navy officers who attempted to murder Mr. Otis in a British coffee-house in Boston for words publisht in the papers, from which attack he never fully recovered, but he lived until 1783 to see his opinions establisht and his country free.

The members of the court being the servants of George the Third and the demons of oppression, issued the writs to please their masters but being made so unpopular by Mr. Otis, they were seldom used. The supporters of George the Third were so numerous in England, in and out of parliament, that they carried all before them. An act was past for quartering troops on the Americans and General Gage was sent out as Governor of Massachusetts, as well as commander-in-chief to enforce the coercive will of the King.

On the day of Gage's arrival, a town meeting was held in Boston at which the actions of the King and parliament were denount as impolitic, unjust, cruel and inhuman—"exceeding the powers of expression, therefore we leave it to the censure of others and appeal to God and the world."

From that meeting to the unconditional surrender of Cornwallis at Yorktown on October 19, 1781 and the treaty of peace in which George the Third, on September 3, 1783, recognized America as an independent nation, the God of Creation inspired and blest the American people.

Patrick Henry was elected a member of the House of Burgesses, where, in 1765, he introduced his celebrated resolutions against the Stamp Act, which opened the door to revolution in Virginia. In the midst of the debate, which those resolutions created, "he exclaimed with a voice of thunder and the look of a God: 'Tarqin and Caesar had each his Brutus; Charles the First his Cromwell, and George the Third—('Treason! cried the speaker. 'Treason! Treason!' echoed from every part of the

house. Without faltering, Henry rose to a still loftier attitude, and fixing on the Speaker an eye of the most determined fire, finished his sentence with the firmest emphasis)—may profit by their example. If this be treason, make the most of it.”

The resolution, which caused the debate, declared that the power to lay taxes and imposts upon the inhabitants vested solely in the General Assembly of the colony, and that every attempt to vest such power in any person or persons, whatesoever, other than the General Assembly, aforesaid, has a manifest tendency to destroy British as well as American freedom.” The resolution, tho opposed by John and Payton Randolph, and by Wythe and Robinson, was carried by one majority, but, during the absence of Henry, was expunged from the records on the following day. However, the sentiments had safely past beyond the power of blotting records; they were lodged in the hearts of freemen, to be cherished and expanded over all the people of the earth. Henry had caused the heart of Virginia to throb in sympathy with the heart of Massachusetts, which had been fired by Otis, three years previously, while opposing the Writs of Assistance.

Henry continued a member of the House of Burgesses for several years, then retired to practice his profession. But the British system of tyranny continued to work till even the Randolphs were forced to rebel or accept civic slavery. A Continental Congress was called to meet at Philadelphia in 1774. It was composed of the the ablest men of the colonies. Payton Randolph, Richard Henry

Lee, George Washington, Patrick Henry, Richard Bland, Benjamin Harrison and Edward Pendleton were the representatives from Virginia. The first Congress did little outside of placing the leading men in touch and sending an address to the king, which he ignored. The meeting was awfully solemn. After the organization the members sat in silence; each seemed reluctant to open the business. Wirt says: "Mr. Henry rose slowly, as if born down by the weight of the subject, and, after faltering, according to his habit, thru a most impressive exordium, he launcht gradually into a recital of colonial wrongs. Rising as he advanct, with the grandeur of the subject, and glowing at length with all the majesty and expectation of the occasion, his speech seemed more than that of a mortal man. There was no rant, no rapsody, no labor of the understanding, no straining of the voice, no confusion of the utterance. His countenance was erect, his eye steady, his action noble, his enunciation clear and firm, his mind poised on its centre, his views of his subject comprehensive and great, and his imagination coruscating with magnificence and a varity which struck even that assembly with amazement and awe. He sat down amid murmurs of astonishment and applaus; and as he had been before proclaimed the greatest orator of Virginia, he was now, on every hand, admitted to be the first orator of America." It was an extempore speech and unfortunately a report of it was not taken. The secret of Patrick Henry's wonderful power can only be found in the inspiration derived from the cause which he represented. God, Freedom and

Humanity—an inspiration which made him the voice of all that was good in heaven and on earth, the medium thru which God revealed to the nations of the world a new system of civic equality, to establish and maintain peace on earth and good will among men.

The first Congress adjourned in October, 1774, and on the twentieth day of the following March the Virginia Convention, which met at Williamsburg and sent the delegates to Philadelphia the previous year, reconvened at Richmond. Mr. Henry was a member. The general sentiment of this Convention was still for reconciliation with George III. But with Mr. Henry it was different, he clearly saw thru the purpose of England, and offered resolutions advocating immediate preparations for the military defense of the colony, which he sustained with a powerful speech. The resolutions were adopted, and a committee to report a plan of defense was appointed, of which Washington and Henry were members. The plan reported by the committee was adopted and then the Convention adjourned.

In the dead of night, on the 20th of April, the British governor, Lord Dunmore sent a naval captain with a body of marines to Williamsburg and carried 20 barrels of powder from the public magazine and placed them on a British schooner anchored in James river. The act aroused the people who took arms and demanded a restoration. A letter was address to the governor asking for its return; but like the boy in the apple tree laughing at clods, the governor paid no attention to the letter. On the 2d day of May, 1775, Mr. Henry, with the indepen-

dent company of Hanover, under arms, marcht against his lordship and soon returned with three hundred and thirty pounds, the price of the powder. Thus the genius who had ten years before in debate opened the door leading to American freedom, now had the honor of making the first successful movement on the field of war in defense of that freedom. The defeated governor, from his place of safety, issued a proclamation on the event, in which he referred to "a certain Patrick Henry and a number of deluded followers" as disloyal spirits and then retired from the colony forever.

In April 1776 Judge William Henry Drayton, of South Carolina, delivering a charge to the grand jury said: "I think it my duty to declare in the awful seat of justice, and before almighty God, that, in my opinion, the Americans can have no safety but by the Divine favor, their own virtue and their being so potent, as not to leave it in the power of the British rulers to injure them. Indeed, the ruinous and deadly injuries received on our side, and the jealousies entertained, and which in the nature of things, must daily increase against us on the other, demonstrates to a mind, in the least given to reflection upon the rise and fall of empires, that true reconciliation never can exist between Great Britain and America, the latter being in subjection to the former." "The Almighty created America to be independent of Britain; let us beware of the impiety of being backward to act as an instrument in the Almighty hand, now extended to accomplish his purpose; and by the completion of which alone, America, in the nature of human affairs, can be

secured against the craft and insidious designs of her enemies who think her prosperity and power already by far too great. In a word, our piety and political safety are so blended, that to refuse our labors to this divine work, is to refuse to be a great, a free, a pious and a happy people. And now having left this important alternative, political happiness or wretchedness, under God, in a great degree in your own hands; I pray the supreme Arbiter, of the affairs of men, so to direct your judgment, as that you may act agreeably to what seems to be His will revealed in His miraculous works in behalf of America, bleeding on the altar of liberty."

This patriotic charge to the South Carolina grand jury, was the forerunner of the Declaration of Independence, by the colonies assembled in congress at Philadelphia, July 4, 1776. Severing forever, the political tie binding America to Great Britain, because of "repeated injuries and usurpations, all having in direct object, the establishment of an absolute tyranny over the states," and to prove this, congress submitted to a candid world grievous acts of oppression, then said: "Appealing to the Supreme Judge of the world, for the rectitude of our intentions, do, in the name and authority of the good people of these colonies, solemnly publish and declare, that these United Colonies are, and of right ought to be, Free and Independent States. And for the support of this declaration, with a firm reliance on the protection of Divine Providence, we mutually pledge to each other, our lives, our fortunes and our sacred honor."

M. Guizot, the French statesman and historian,

says: "The day had arrived when power had forfeited its claim to loyal obedience; and when the people were called upon to protect themselves by force, no longer finding in the established order of things either safety or shelter. Such a moment is a fearful one, big with unknown events; one which no human sagacity can predict, and no human government can control; but which, notwithstanding, does sometimes come, bearing an impress stamped by the hand of God." "If the struggle which begins at such a moment, were one absolutely forbidden; if at the mysterious point in which it arises, this great social duty did not press even on the heads of those who deny its existence, the human race, long ago, wholly fallen under the yoke, would have lost all dignity as well as all happiness."

But the Spiritual God of Creation in that fearful and fateful moment protected the dignity, happiness and freedom of His well beloved ward—America. Nor did any nation need the Divine care more than America at that mysterious moment, big with unknown events. While the farmers of America were strangers to the art of war, they were not to Divine precepts of religion. The colonial congress assembled in Philadelphia opened its sessions with prayer, in which the immortal Washington joined in fervent devotion to God.

While Washington and the American patriots were praying in Philadelphia to the Almighty God for peace and justice, King George and his cabinet in London, were devising plans for a barbarous war on his American subjects. In July, 1775, Lord Dartmouth, secretary for the colonies, wrote to

Colonel Johnson, the commissioner of Indians for Canada, saying: "It is his majesty's pleasure that you do lose no time in taking such steps as may induce the Six Nations to take up the hatchet against his majesty's rebellious subjects in America, and to engage them in his majesty's service upon such plan as shall be suggested to you by General Gage, to whom this letter is sent, accompanied with a large assortment of goods for presents to them upon this important occasion."

While at Crown Point, in June 1777, on his way to Saratoga, and the fate that awaited him at the hands of the farmers of Vermont, New Hampshire and Massachusetts, General Burgoyne, gave a war feast to his Indians and bade them: "Go forth in the might of your valor; strike at the common enemies of Great Britain and America, disturbers of public order, peace and happiness; destroyers of commerce, parricides of the states."

Inside of two months, Stark defeated this monster at Bennington, killing and capturing nearly one thousand of his army. A clergyman from Berkshire County appeared with the men of his flock the day before the battle and addressing General Stark said: "We the people of Berkshire have been frequently called upon to fight, but have never been led against the enemy. We have now resolved, if you will not let us fight, never to turn out again." General Stark asked him if he wisht to march then, when it was dark and rainy. "No," was the answer. "Then," continued Stark, "if the Lord should give us sunshine, and I do not give you fighting enough, I will never ask you to come again." The weather

cleared in the course of the day, and the men of Berkshire followed their spiritual guide into action. As the enemy approacht Stark exclaimed: "See, men! There are the red coats. We must beat today or Molly Stark is a widow." The battle of Bennington, blest by the Berkshire Clergyman and his flock, was fought and gallantly won for Molly Stark and American freedom. Within two months after the battle of Bennington, and only four months after Burgoyne advised his Indian allies to go forth in their might against America, he and his army were American prisoners at Saratoga.

The Northern Army of America had been under the command of General Schuyler, one of the bravest, the safest and most honorable officers in the American service, but being of Dutch descent he was not admired by the Puritants of New England, who used their influence with congress to have him superseded by General Horatio Gates an Englishman.

General Schuyler accutely felt the disgrace of his removal. Writing to Washington he said: "It is a matter of extreme chagrin to me to be deprived of the command at a time when soon, if ever, we shall be enabled to face the enemy, where we are on the point of taking ground where they must attack to a disadvantage, should our force be inadequate to face them in the field; when an opportunity occurs, in which I might evince that I am not what congress has too plainly insinuated in taking the command from me."

Schuyler and Stark in the campaign leading up to the battle of Bennington had out-manouvered

Burgoyne and placed him where he was unable to extricate himself and forced his surrender at Saratoga. Congress soon found, what Washington felt, that a great mistake had been made in superseding General Schuyler, and what America will always find, that it is not safe in a conflict between British and American interests to trust American interests to the care of an Englishman.

In the terms of Burgoyne's surrender, Gage allowed him to march out of camp with all the honors of war and promised free embarkation and passage to Europe from Boston on condition that they would not serve in America again during that war; the army not to be separated, particularly the men from the officers; roll call and other duties of regularity to be permitted the officers to be admitted on parole and to wear their sidearms, all private property to be retained and the public to be delivered upon honor, no baggage to be searched or molested; all persons of whatever country appertaining to, or following the camp, to be fully comprehended in the terms of capitulation, liable to its conditions.

It was Gate's duty to report the Saratoga victory to his commander-in-chief, General Washington, but being of a scheming, undermining nature, he sent Wilkinson, his aid-de-camp to report direct to congress; who on being introduced said: "The whole British army has laid down arms at Saratoga; our own, full of vigor and courage, expect your orders. It is for your wisdom to decide where the country may still need their services."

Congress passed a vote of thanks and a gold medal to Gates and made a brigadier general of Wilkin-

son. A conspiracy formed by Gates, General Charles Lee, (also an Englishman) Count de Conway, an Irishman in the service of France who joined the American army in May, and General Wilkinson, then existed to have Gates supersede Washington as Commander-in-Chief. Had this conspiracy succeeded, it would have ended in final submission to British despotism, as Gates and Lee, undoubtedly would have accepted British terms and would have assumed their former ranks in the British service, or perhaps have been made Lords. All of the conspirators against Washington, retired from the American service in disgrace.

Even Gates' friends in congress refused to allow the British soldiers to sail for England, where they would have relieved others, to be immediately returned against America. The captured army was detained for some months in Massachusetts, then sent to Virginia and finally releast by exchange. The retention of Burgoyne's army for exchange, was denounc't by British writers as "dishonorable, by which Americans lost more in character than they gained in strength," but there are no people in the world who talk louder about honor and practice it so seldom, as the English.

The sick and wounded were carefully attended to and the officers and troops were made to feel that their conquerors were as generous as they were brave. Even General Schuyler, whose beautiful house was in ashes by order of Burgoyne; received that vandal general at Albany with marked attention, which caused him to say: "You show me great kindness, tho I have done you much in-

jury." To which Schuyler replied: "That was the fate of war. Let us say no more about it."

While Burgoyne and his officers were enjoying American hospitality, the British navy was sailing up the Hudson, laying Esopus and other American villages in ashes; and the Brants, Butlers and Johnsons were rallying their Indians under the flag of Britain for the diabolical work of the following year.

During the summer of 1778, the Indians and Tories combined in murderous raids upon the old men, women and children in the Mohawk, Schoharie and Cherry Valleys in New York, and the Wyoming Valley in Pennsylvania. They swept over the settlements spreading death and desolation everywhere and made the nights as bright as day with burning houses. Women and children suffered untold horrors at the hands of savages, paid and directed by British officers. A flourishing settlement, called Wyoming, on the Susquehanna River, which had gained the enmity of England by sending one thousand soldiers to the continental army, first felt the destroying edge of the Indian hatchet.

July 1, 1778, sixteen hundred Tories, Indians and English half-breeds, under Colonel John Butler, made an attack on this settlement. After assuring the settlers that they had no designs against them, they rusht on the fort. Only a few prisoners were taken, the remaining men, women and children were confined in the houses and barracks and burned. Another fort surrendered with seventy continental soldiers, who to a man were butchered in a barbarous manner and like the first fort, the men,

women and children were all consumed by fire. Then the savages spread a like destruction thruout the settlement, sparing only the houses and farms of the Tories. This was instigated and paid for by a nation which a few months before had talked so loudly about the honor and character of America.

Captain Bradlock, a prisoner, was tortured by having his body stuck full of splinters of pine knots and a fire of dry wood made around him, then his two companions, Captains Ransom and Durkee, were thrown into the same fire and held down with pitchforks until consumed. A few individuals mostly women and children escaped to the woods, where they wandered in terror and distress without provisions or covering, crying for the avenging hand of Heaven to fall on the King of England and his destroying agents in America, who brought upon them savages with fire-brands, tomahawks and scalping knives. Nor were their prayers in vain, George the Third died a driveling idiot.

Congress thoroly aroused by British atrocities denounc't them by resolution in October, 1778, which concluded as follows: "We, therefore, the congress of the United States of America, do solemnly declare and proclaim that if our enemies presume to execute their threats or persist in their present career of barbarity, we will take such exemplary vengeance as shall deter others from a like conduct. We will appeal to that God who searches the hearts of men for the rectitude of our intentions; and in His holy presence we declare that, as we are not moved by any light or hasty suggestions of anger

or revenge, so thru every change of fortune, we will adhere to this, our determination."

July 4, 1779, a fleet of forty-six ships, manned by 2,000 sailors and 3,000 soldiers, under the infamous British commander, Byron, with orders from Sir Henry Clenton, "to do the business quickly," entered Long Island Sound, and in eight days, after pillaging the beautiful towns of New Haven, Fairfield, Norwalk and Green's Farm, and abusing and insulting their inhabitants, gave the towns to flames. Dwellings, schools, churches, courthouses and other buildings to the number of 696 were left in ashes.

Of this Lossing says: "It was a cruel and wanton destruction of property and none but a small mind and a spiteful heart, could have conceived and consummated so foul an act."

Washington writing to Lafayette, said: "The operations of the enemy in this campaign, have been confined to the work of defense, and the burning of the defenseless towns of New Haven, Fairfield and Norwalk, where little else was or could be opposed to them, than the cries of distress women and helpless children; but those were offered in vain. Since these notable exploits they have never stepped out of their works."

The slaughter of old men, women and children by Indians, in the unprotected settlements of New York and Pennsylvania, was not near so cruel and fiendish as the lingering death of American sailors in the Wallabout Bay prisonships at New York, where twelve thousand Americans, who were after their confinement offered the opportunity of betraying their country's cause, by enlisting in the

British service, preferred certain death, than such dishonor.

At the dedication of a monument to those American hero-martyrs, in 1909, by the joint action of the Republic and the State of New York, President-elect Taft said: "The monument which we dedicate, commemorates the sacrifice for their country of the lives of upward of ten thousand Americans who were hurried, more than a century ago, into what seemed for years to be an inglorious oblivion. They died because of the cruelties of their immediate custodians, and the neglect of those who higher in authority were responsible for their detention. They were the prisoners captured in the war of the Revolution. Their identity and personant^y have not been preserved, and we who assemble in grateful recollection of their patriotic self-sacrifice, are compelled to refer to them as the 'unknown' dead."

The secretary of war, General Luke Wright, said: "The story of the experiences of the martyrs honored by this shaft, makes one of the darkest pages in the annals of the Revolution. They met without complaint, starvation and deprivation and suffered the most loathsome disease rather than prove traitors to their country. The thing that makes a nation great, is its men rather than its material resources, and such men as these helped to make our nation great. We are now about to pay a long delayed debt. When we consider how long the lapse of time between the incurring and the paying, we might truly say that republics are ungrateful, but it is a fact that the contemporaries of men rarely do them justice. The remoter gen-

erations have a broader perspective and are better able to do honor to the great deeds of those who have gone before. We have erected this monument in tribute to the martyrs who suffered for their country. And now, Governor Hughes, I present to you as Governor of the State in which they suffered, and to you Mr. McGowan, as representing the city which witnessed their sufferings."

Governor Hughes said: "Fortunate are the people whose soil has been the scene of patriotic service and heroic devotion to a noble cause. We cannot afford to be indifferent to examples of fortitude, or to lose by forgetfulness, the stimulus of lessons of sacrifice. We commemorate today not the deeds of great men or of those possessed of surpassing talent or extraordinary power. This is a monument to the service and sacrifice of those whose chief distinction is not that of fortune or condition, or of superior position, talent or opportunity, but who revealed in deep distress and in the agony of body and soul, the qualities which dignify our common humanity. It was the plain man, the simple patriot, who in the lowest depths of misery in the prison-ship, refused his freedom at the cost of his allegiance to the cause of liberty.

"This long delayed testimonial of our appreciation of the patriotic sufferings of the martyrs of the prison-ships is the result of a trinity of effort. It represents the co-operation of the nation, the state and of private citizens. Thus it typifies the harmony of endeavor essential to the permanency of the benefits of this early sacrifice aided to make it possible. Today we erect a monument not merely

to the heroes of the war, but to our own aspiration and to our own loftiest sentiments. We would ourselves be endowed with the indomitable spirit which flamed in the patriots of long ago; we would point our children to a memorial of the victories of character; we would have the love of country a burning passion, fired by noble memories, intensified by intelligent appreciation of opportunity and obligation, and furnishing the motive power for the finer services of peace."

Mr. McGowan said: "If lessons of stone and bronze are needed to remind the youth of our land, of the heroism and fortitude of those who suffered and died to establish this union and preserve it from disruption, they are not lacking in our city. They ornament our parks and public places, and patriotic societies and individuals have added their zeal and endeavor to governmental effort in perpetuating the achievements of those brave men and women who sacrificed life and property that we might enjoy independence and liberty which today exist in these United States.

"We are not met today to honor the memory of some great captain of our armies who marshaled his hosts to triumphant victory nor are we here to honor those valiant privates who shed their blood upon the field of battle in obedience to the word of command. We are here to pay tribute to the sad memory of thousands of American revolutionary prisoners who suffered martyrdom in condemned hulks used as prisons. Bad provisions and bad water, scanty rations and complete absence of medical attendance brought about a condition where

disease and misery reigned unassisted and left behind one of the most appalling records in the annals of warfare.

"Thousands suffered and died whose names are unknown to their countrymen and no tongue can adequately describe their sublime devotion to their country. A century ago thirty thousand people thronged the heights near the place of sepulture to pay their homage of reverence and respect to the remains of their patriot martyrs who gasped for existence where life was full about them, and who perisht of fever and plague when the breeze of health was fresh and strong.

"The civilized world stood aghast with horror at the terrible suffering of those who perisht in the Black Hole of Calcutta, yet their tortures were brief and mercifully ended in a few hours, while the agonies of the prison-ship martyrs were spent in long-drawn sufferings and torture, even weeks and months of misery.

"When we recall the sacrifices of the men of that day, who endured every privation and suffering in the camp, on the field of battle, in the hospital and the prison, to found this republic, it is not asking too much of the citizens of today to safeguard and transmit unimpaired the liberty which it guarantees to those who are to follow us."

Thousands upon thousands of those victims of British cruelty were buried on the shores of Wallabout Bay, not more than five hundred yards from the hulks of the prison ships and covered with sand in such an insufficient way that the recurring tides disclosed their bodies to the air and washed their bones

farther from the shore. The chief prison-ships were the Jersey, the Whitby and the Hope; each a floating hell and so intended.

The monument is a granite shaft, two hundred feet high and cost \$200,000, of which the government contributed \$100,000; the State of New York \$25,000 and the City of New York \$50,000. The Society of Old Brooklynites, the Sons of the Revolution, the Fort Green Chapter of the D. A. R., the Long Island Society Daughters of the Revolution, were present in large numbers and contributed to its cost, as was Congressman J. J. Fitzgerald, who made the monument possible by securing the appropriation from congress. The bones of the martyrs were collected and entombed in 1808 by the Tammany Society of New York.

We have seen that the Continental Congress opened its sessions with prayer in which Washington fervently joined. We now find after the surrender of the British at Yorktown, the general orders to the American army, closed as follows: "Divine service shall be performed tomorrow in the different brigades and divisions. The Commander-in-Chief recommends that all the troops that are not upon duty, do assist at it with serious deportment, and that sensibility of heart which the recollections of the surprising and particular interposition of Providence in our favor claims."

A proclamation was also issued by congress appointing the thirteenth of December, as a day of Thanksgiving and prayer, on account of the "signal and manifest favor of Divine Providence in behalf of our country."

Dr. Thacher in his "Military Journal" tells us that Lord Cornwallis did not appear on the day of the surrender of Yorktown, but pretended to be indisposed. Perhaps he was, as the occasion was a disagreeable one for a brutal and pilfering lord to face, especially as his army had been systematically plundering the country in every direction. He was represented by General O'Hara. His demonship did not like to face the head of some private family owning the pilfered plate with which his table was then being served. More than fifteen million dollars worth of American property was destroyed or pilaged by his royal army during the six months previous to its surrender at Yorktown.

It required nearly two years after the Yorktown surrender, before the treaty of peace was signed. On April 19, 1783, just eight years after the blood of American freemen was shed by British soldiers at Lexington, the illustrious Washington invoked the blessing of God upon his victorious army and ordered his chaplains of brigades to "render thanks to Almighty God for all his mercies, particularly for over-ruling the wrath of man to his own glory, and causing the rage of war to cease among the nations." America, victorious, was now a free and independent nation, and an acknowledged power among the nations of the earth.

In July, 1782, George the Third, acting in a sullen acquiescence in results he could not prevent; every annoying difficulty was interposed by him to perplex the peace negotiations as much as possible in order to deprive Americans of every advantage which could be wrested from them. Writing to

Lord Sherburne, the King said: "I will be plain with you, the point next to my heart, and which I am determined, be the consequence what it may, never to relinquish but with my crown and life, is to prevent a total, unequivocal recognition of the independence of America. Promise to support me on this ground and I will leave you unmolested on every other, and with full power as the prime minister of the kingdom."

But like Cornwallis at Yorktown, the King and his parliament, surrendered unconditionally, December 3, 1783, to the inspired agents of the Spiritual Gods of Creation—Franklin, Jay and Adams—the American peace commissioners at Paris. The victorious American army of farmers retired quietly to their homes. Their great commander hastened to Annapolis, in Maryland, where congress was sitting and on December 23, resigned into their hands, the untarnisht commission received from them more than eight years before. After the last hostile foot had departed and his country was free, he returned to his farm on the banks of the Potomac, leaving to America, a spectacle of moral sublimity unequalled in the history of nations.

Closing Scenes.

The definite treaty of peace between Great Britain and the United States of America was signed at Paris, September third, 1783. While arranging for the disbanding of his army, Washington consulted with congress and recommended the formation of a well-regulated and disciplined militia during peace, and upon the great questions pressing upon his mind about the future career of his beloved

America and the welfare of the officers and men who had fought to make it free, he address a circular letter to the governors of the states, from which we take the following: "The citizens of America placed in the most enviable condition, as the sole lords and proprietors of a vast tract of continent, comprehending all the various soils and climates of the world, and abounding with all necessities and conveniences of life, are now by the late satisfactory pacification acknowledged to be possessors of absolute freedom and independence; they are from this period to be considered as the actors on a most conspicuous theatre, which seems to be peculiarly designed by Providence for the display of human greatness and felicity; here they are not only surrounded with every thing that can contribute to the completion of private and domestic enjoyment, but Heaven has crowned all its other blessings by giving a surer opportunity for political happiness than any other nation has ever been favored with. * * * If their citizens should not be completely free and happy, the fault will be entirely their own." "There is an option still left to the United States of America, whether they will be respectable and prosperous, or contemptible and miserable as a nation. This is the time of their probation; this is the moment when the eyes of the world are turned upon them; this is the time to establish or ruin their national character forever; this is the favorable moment to give such a tone to the federal government as will enable it to answer the ends of its institutions; or this may be the ill-fated moment for relaxing the powers of the

union; annihilating the cement of the confederation and exposing us to become the sport of European politics, which may play one state against another, to prevent their growing importance and to serve their own interested purpose. For, according to the system of policy the states shall adopt at this moment, they will stand or fall, and by their confirmation or lapse, it is yet to be decided whether the revolution must ultimately be considered as a blessing or a curse; a blessing or a curse not to the present age alone; for, with our fate, will the destiny of unborn millions be involved.

"I have thus freely disclosed what I wisht to make known before I surrendered up my public trust to those who committed it to me; the task is now accomlisht. I now bid adieu to your excellency, as the Chief Magistrate of your state; at the same time, I bid a last farewell to the cares of office, and all the employments of public life.

"It remains, then, to be my final and only request that your excellency will communicate these sentiments to your legislature, at their next meeting, and that they may be considered as the legacy of one who has ardently wisht on all occasions, to be useful to his country, and who, even in the shade of retirement, will not fail to implore the Divine benediction upon it.

"I now make it my earnest prayer that God would have you, and the state over which you preside, in His holy protection; that He would incline the hearts of the citizens to cultivate a spirit of subordination and obedience to government; to entertain a brotherly affection and love for one

another; for their fellow citizens of the United States at large; and particularly for their brethren who served in the field; and, finally, that He would be pleased to dispose us all to do justice, to love mercy, and to demean ourselves with that charity, humility and pacific spirit of mind, which were the characteristics of the Divine Author of our blest religion, without an humble imitation of Whose example, in these things, we can never hope to be a happy nation."

Surrender of George III.

We learn from "Men and Times of the Revolution," by Watson, how George the Third, in the House of Lords, December 5, 1783, reluctantly acknowledged the independence of America. Watson also gives us the language key to the movement now in progress by the "Anglo-American League" to destroy the work of Washington by merging America in an English speaking empire. Watson was taken to the door of the house by Lord Ferriers, who whispered—"Get as near the throne as you can; fear nothing." "The King was announct by a tremendous roar of artillery. He was clothed in royal robes. Apparently agitated, he drew from his pocket, the scroll containing his speech. The commons were summoned, and after the bustle of their entrance subsided, he proceeded to read his speech. I was near the King and watcht with intense interest every tone of his voice, and expression of his countenance. It was to me a moment of thrilling and dignified exultation. After some general and usual remarks, he continued: "I lost no time in giving the necessary orders to prohibit

the further prosecution of offensive war upon the Continent of North America. Adopting, as my inclination will always lead me to do, with decision and effect, whatever I collect to be the sense of my parliament and my people. I have pointed all my views and measures in Europe, as in North America, to an entire and cordial reconciliation with the colonies. Finding it indispensable to the attainment of this object, I did not hesitate to go to the full length of the powers vested in me and offer to declare them—

Here he paused and was in evident agitation; either embarrass in reading his speech, by the darkness of the room, or affected by a very natural emotion. In a moment he resumed: “and offer to declare them free and independent states. In thus admitting their separation from the crown of these kingdoms, I have sacrificed every consideration of my own, to the wishes and opinions of my people. I make it my humble and ardent prayer to Almighty God, that Great Britain may not feel the evils which result from so great a dismemberment of the empire, and that America may be free from the calamity which formerly proved, in the mother country, how essential monarchy is to the enjoyment of constitutional liberty. Religion, language, interests and affection, may, and I hope will yet prove a bond of permanent union between the two countries.”

“It is remarked that George the Third is celebrated for reading his speeches in a distinct, free and impressive manner. On this occasion, he was evidently embarrass, he hesitated, choked and

executed the painful duties of the occasion with an ill grace that does not belong to him."

"I cannot adequately portray my sensations in the progress of this address; every artery beat high, and swelled with my proud American blood. It was impossible not to revert to the opposite shores of the Atlantic, and to review in my mind's eye, the misery and woe I had myself witnessed in several stages of the contest, and the widespread desolation resulting from the stubbornness of this very king, now so prostrate, but who had turned a deaf ear to our humble and importunate petitions for relief. The great drama was now closed. The battle of Lexington exhibited its first scene. The Declaration of Independence was a lofty and glorious event in its progress; and the ratification of our independence by the King, consummated the spectacle in triumph and exultation. The successful issue of the American Revolution will in all probability, influence eventually, the destinies of the whole human race."

CHAPTER XII.

NO FOREORDAINED EVILS.

Tho the Aryan family was created by the Supreme Spiritual God, to correct the malignant influences of the King of Darkness, yet no branch of the family has been able at any period of time to foresee the evils which that demon and his angels of discord had in store for the human family until after the blight of his influence was manifest in the demoralized virtue and mental frenzy of some trusted man, or set of men, or even a whole community of nations. The Aryan family was not endowed with prevision, nor were the evils to which they were and are liable, foreordained. But the family has been amply endowed by their Creator with reason to judge between right and wrong and a free will in the proper exercise of such judgment.

It is irreverent, absurd and untruthful for man, tribe or nation to charge, as in August 1914, the Almighty God with foreordaining the evils of war brought on themselves by their own malicious conduct. No man, tribe or nation ever suffered by obeying the simple, beneficent mandates of God, to cultivate the soil; be just and truthful; pure in thought and deed; to be chaste; to respect marriage and shun polygamy. Millions of books have been written by the followers of evil and filled with mystic lore to delude the people; but they have not been able to obscure in the minds of the Aryan family, those beautiful, civilizing precepts divinely

revealed to their fathers at the cradle of their race.

While the Aryan family has produced innumerable demons of immorality and destruction, their inherited spirit of liberty; their justice, truth and love of purity were in all periods, and in every emergency sufficiently strong to redeem the family from the evil influence of the King of Darkness, not only restoring it to its former plane of usefulness as the chosen family of God, but advancing it in every cycle of time to a still higher level, making each year, day and hour better than the one preceeding it. There never was a year when the human family in all parts of the world, was mentally and physically as strong as now, December 1914, and each succeeding year will find it better until the dross of evil entirely disappears and the earth once more becomes a delightful Eden of industry, morality, equity and peace.

Since the Declaration of Independence and the adoption of the American constitution, the nations of the world, at least the mass of their peoples, have had their faces turned toward the Republic of Washington, as their teacher and guide. The American system of representative government, of the people, by the people and for the people, was inspired by the Spiritual God of Creation. It was not copied from England nor from any system that preceeded it. John Adams tells us that the only models the people at large ever considered when framing the articles of federation, were those of the Batavian and Helvetic confederacies.

At the failure of the old federation in 1786, Franklin in the deliberations of the Philadelphia

convention said: "We have gone back to ancient history for models of government and examined the different forms of those republics, which having been originally formed with the seeds of their own disolution now no longer exist; and we have viewed modern states all around Europe, but find none of their constitutions suitable to our circumstances. In the situation of this assembly, groping as it were, in the dark, to find political truth, and scarce able to distinguish it when presented to us, how has it happened, sir, that we have not hitherto once thot of humbly applying to the Father of Lights to illuminate our understandings? In the beginning of the contest with Britain, we had daily prayers in this room for the divine protection! Our prayers, sir, were heard—and they were graciously answered. All of us, who were engaged in the struggle, must have observed frequent instances of a superintending Providence in our favor. To that kind Providence we owe this happy opportunity of cosulting in peace on the many means of establishing our future national felicity. And have we now forgotten that powerful Friend? Or do we imagine we no longer need His assistance? I have lived, sir, a long time, and the longer I live, the more convincing proofs I see of this truth. That God governs in the affairs of man! If a sparrow cannot fall to the ground without his notice, is it probable that an empire can rise without His aid? We have been assured, sir, in the sacred writings, that, except the Lord shall build the house, they labor in vain that build it. I firmly believe this; and I also believe that without his concurring aid we shall succeed in this political

building no better than the builders of Babel; we shall be divided by our little, partial, local interests; our projects will be confounded and we ourselves shall become a reproach and a by-word down to future ages. And what is worse, mankind may hereafter, from this unfortunate instance, despair of establishing government by human wisdom, and leave it to chance, war and conquest; I therefore beg leave to move. That henceforth prayers imploring the assistance of Heaven, and its blessings on our deliberations, be held in this assembly every morning before we proceed to business and that one or more of the clergy of this city be requested to officiate in that service."

Only four members of the convention failed to vote for Franklin's resolution. Before its adoption three weeks had been spent without producing the least disposition to consider the welfare of all the States as being superior to the local interest of any one of them. "E Pluribus Unum" now became the motto both of the Convention and the system of government which included thirteen independent States united as one, with provisions to add others from time to time, until now they number forty-eight. The wisdom of man never devised a safer system of government than the Republic of America, inspired and guided by the Spiritual God or Creation.

In establishing the Constitution, the service of the immortal Washington was recalled to save the independent States which he had freed from British despotism, from again falling, one by one, under that blighting power, whose disturbing commercial

and political agents were active among the remnants of the tories; tho more than thirty thousand of them had retired to England and Canada with the British army, there were still enough remaining to create discord and by earnest activity, made up what they lacked in numbers.

Washington was unanimously chosen first President of the Republic, and was re-elected for a second term. He wisely disposed of the schemes of both England and France to involve America in the political strifes of Europe; here displaying the highest qualities of statesmanship, surpassing even his greatness as a military leader.

On retiring from the presidency, Washington issued a farwell address to the "People of the United States." It was the work of an inspired mind and should be incorporated as a political chart in the school literature of the Republic.

The following extracts among many others, form a jewel of political wisdom and a fixed star to guide America as head of the nations: "Citizens, by birth or choice, of a common country, that country has a right to concentrate your affections. The name of American which belongs to you in your national capacity, must always exalt the just pride of patriotism."

"Party spirit exists under different shapes in all governments, but in those of a popular form it is seen in its greatest rankness, and is truly their worst enemy. Its a fire to be quencht, it demands a uniform vigilance to prevent its bursting into a flame, lest, instead of warming, it should consume. It opens the door to foreign influence and corrup-

tion, subjecting the policy and will of one country to those of another.

"Observe good faith and justice towards all nations, cultivate peace and harmony with all; thus give to mankind the magnanimous and too novel example, of a people always guided by exalted justice and benevolence. Inveterate antipathies against particular nations, and passionate attachments for others should be avoided, as either, to some degree, enslaves a nation and tends to lead it astray from its own duty and interest; creating the illusion of an imaginary common interest where none exists; giving ambitious corrupt or deluded citizens facility to betray or sacrifice the interest of their own country without odium.

"Against the insidious wiles of foreign influence, the jealousy of a free people ought to be constantly awake, as it is one of the most baneful foes of republican government. The great rule of conduct for us, in regard to foreign nations, is in extending our commercial relations, to have with them as little political connection as possible."

Europe has a set of primary interests, which to us have none, or a very remote relation. Our detachment and distant situation invites and enables us to pursue a different course. Why forego the advantages of so peculiar a situation? Why quit our own to stand upon foreign ground? Why, by interweaving our destiny with that of any part of Europe, entangle our peace and prosperity in the toils of European ambition, rivalry, interest, humor or caprice? It is folly in one nation to look for disinterested favors from another. There can

be no greater error than to expect or calculate upon real favors from nation to nation. It is an illusion, which experience must cure, which a just pride ought to disregard."

About the date that this patriotic advice was given to America, British merchants and officers were busily engaged from Canada to New York, cultivating anti-American sentiments among the Puritans, with a view of restoring its monarchical system over the New England States; while France had its official agents, Genet and Adet in the South openly insulting Washington, dictating to the people of the South and West, how they should vote. Neither England nor France cared about the welfare of America, except to use it in advancing their political interests in Europe. We quote from what is known as the "Mazzei Letter," by Jefferson, the following: "The aspect of our politics has wonderfully changed since you left us, April 24, 1796. In place of that noble love of liberty and republican government, which carried us triumphantly thru the war, an Anglican, monarchical and aristocratical party has sprung up, whose avowed object is to draw over us in substance, as they have already done, the forms of British government. The main body of our citizens, however, remain true to their republican principles; the whole landed interest is republican, and so is a great mass of talents. Against us are the executive, the judiciary, two out of three branches of the legislature; all the officers of the government; all who want to be officers; all timid men, who prefer the calm of despotism to the boisterous sea of liberty. British merchants, and

Americans trading on British capital, speculators and holders in the banks and public funds, a contrivance invented for the purposes of corruption, and for assimilating us in all things to the rotten as well as the sound parts of the British model.

"It would give you a fever were I to name to you the apostates who have gone over to these heresies; men who were Samsons in the field, and Solomons in the council, but who have had their heads shorn by the harlot England. In short we are likely to preserve the liberty we have obtained, only by unremitting labors and perils. But we shall preserve it; and our mass of weight and wealth on the good side is so great, as to leave no danger that force will ever be attempted against us. We have only to wake and snap the Lilliputian cords, with which they have been entangling us during the first sleep which succeeded our labors."

Mazzei publisht Jefferson's letter at Florence, Italy. It next appeared in Paris, then in London, and finally reacht America, creating everywhere profound interest. The Federalists, under Alexander Hamilton, John Jay and Josiah Quincy, as leaders, were strong partisans of England (while the republicans under Jefferson were equally as strong partisans of France. Washington stood between them and saved America from the political schemes of both, without the least desire to become king or emperor. He would rather be an American citizen on his Mount Vernon farm, than be the Emperor of the World. There is no man in the history of the world whom time has so thoroly vindicated as it has our immortal Washington. He

was ever, in thot, word and deed, in harmony with the Divine mandates of the Spiritual God of Creation.

The American Lamp of Liberty lit by the great Otis in 1761; which in a mighty flash, sent its cheering rays out over the humanity of the world, carrying a message to the men of all races that a brighter social future was dawning in America for the opprest of all nations; but now some of the men who gallantly sustained, both in council and on the field of war, the sentiments for which Otis gave his life; falling under the evil influence of the dark demons, of discord in the service of England, after the battle for freedom had been fought and won, commenct to find fault with the spreading rays of the lamp of liberty, which was now exceeding their mental vision, going out over a continent instead of the fringe of a section, boldly demanded that the rays of the lamp be dimmed or they would destroy the lamp and return to the darkness of their fathers.

The British government, disregarding the treaty of peace, held several fortified camps within the American lines under pretense of collecting debts contracted previous to the war; and used them to encourage Indians in destroying American settlements; while her ships of war hovered near American ports suppressing commerce and impressing American seamen into the British service; indicating that when free in Europe from the dangers of Napoleon, America would have to fight to retain her existence as an independent nation. While waiting for the occasion, the governor of Canada

was active in organizing Puritan sentiment in New England to cut that section off in a confederacy with Canada, or restore monarchy in all America.

In 1801, the republicans elected Jefferson president. In 1803 he secured from Napoleon by purchase, the vast territory of Louisiana, extending from the Mississippi to the Rocky Mountains, and from the Gulf of Mexico to the frozen seas of the North. At the time of this acquisition, England and Spain were holding the mouth of the Mississippi and between them expected to secure the whole valley east and west of the river. Not being in a condition to defend the territory, Napoleon sold it to America and Jackson took possession of West Florida, thus securing free access to the sea for the Americans of the South and West.

Both measures were opposed by the New England Puritans. When the occupancy of West Florida and the admission of the Territory of Orleans as a state, came up in Congress in 1811, Josiah Quincy speaking for the Pilgrims said:

"I am compelled to declare it as my deliberate opinion that if this bill passes, the bonds of this union are virtually dissolved; that the states, which compose it are free from their moral obligations and that as it will be the right of all, so it will be the duty of some to prepare, definitely, for a separation, amicably, if they can; violently, if they must. * * * New states are intended to be formed beyond the Mississippi. There is no limit to man's imaginations on this subject short of California and the Columbia River. When I said that the bill would justify a revolution and would pro-

duce it, I spoke of its principles and its practical consequence. To this principle and those consequences, I would call the attention of the house and nation. If it be about to introduce a condition of things absolutely insupportable, it becomes wise and honest men to anticipate the evil and to warn and prepare the people against the event. I have no hesitation on the subject. The extension of this principle to the states contemplated beyond the Mississippi, cannot, will not, and ought not to be borne. And the sooner the people contemplate the unavoidable result, the better; the more likely that convulsions may be prevented; the more hope that the evils may be palliated or removed. I oppose the bill from no animosity to the people of Orleans; but from the deep conviction, that it contains a principle incompatible with the liberties and safety of my country. I have no concealment of my opinion. The bill, if it passes, is a death blow to the Constitution. It may afterwards linger, but lingering, its fate will, at no distant period, be consummated."

Despite the evils predicted the bill past by a large majority. We may well believe that the destroying demons of British despotism lingered not for a second invitation from the apostatizing Pilgrims of New England; nor did the prince-regent of England acting for his idiotic brother, George the Third, suffering under the curses of the widows and orphans of America, bereaved by the scalping knives, hatches and torches of savage Indians, led by brutish officers, under order of both King and Parliament in 1778.

"Divide and Conquer" is an old British motto, but in this instance it failed. The Spiritual God of Creation was still with America, and inspiring its statesmen. Had the men of New England remained true to the principles of Otis, Adams and Hancock, for which they so gallantly fought from Bunker Hill to Yorktown, the Prince-Regent of England would not have sent Sir John Craig, his Governor-General of Canada into their section of America in 1812, to organize an eastern confederation to disrupt the Union of Washington. Nor when the war of that year, encouraged by the speech of Quincy, commenct they would not have held back their militia as home guards, instead of sending them to support the national cause against the common foe; nor would they have been charged in history with having given blue-light signals to the enemy; nor having had a Hartford Convention in 1814 to conspire against America while British vandals were laying waste the Capitol at Washington and carrying fire and sword into every town, village and hamlet accessible to their marauding ships and boats. It is the first poltroon record in the history of America. What the Hartford Convention at its next session would have done, we can only surmise from what Quincy had declared and the remonstrance of the legislature of Massachusetts to congress, denouncing the war as impolitic and unjust, defending the course of Great Britain, and charging Jefferson republicans with blind devotion and subserviency to France. But their treasonable designs, as well as those of England, to get possession of the Mississippi valley, fell with Paken-

ham on the Plains of Chalmette, near New Orleans, at the feet of General Jackson, January 8th, 1815; never to rise again.

After the declaration of war by congress, the New England members of the house published an address to their constituents opposing it, which caused John Adams to say—"How is it possible that a rational, a social, or moral creature can say that the war is unjust, is to me utterly incomprehensible. How it can be said to be unnecessary is very mysterious. I have thought it both just and necessary, for five of six years. How it can be said to be unexpected, is another wonder. I have expected it for more than five and twenty years, and have had great reason to be thankful that it has been postponed so long."

Upon hearing of the naval victory of the *Hornet* over the *Peacock* June 15, 1813, Quincy introduced a resolution in the Senate of Massachusetts, declaring that in a war like the present, "waged without justifiable cause, and prosecuted in a manner that indicates that conquest and ambition are its real motives, it is not becoming a moral and religious people to express an approbation of military or naval exploits which are not immediately connected with the defense of our sea coast and soil.

Commodore Decatur, who was shut up in the harbor of New London in the winter of 1813, said that every time he attempted to get out, blue-light signals appeared at the mouth of the harbor, putting the British blockading squadron on the alert. Those treason signals, the Hartford Convention, the holding back of the militia, the resolutions and

speeches discouraging America and aiding England, have placed a stain on the men identified with them, and on their descendants, which will require many generations to remove. They also gave Britain cause to still consider New Englanders as mere wandering pilgrims, anxious to return to the home, the flag and the servitude of their fathers.

It has been said by its friends, that the members of the Hartford Convention were high-souled, pure patriots, consulting only for the good and prosperity of the union, but their acts and words, were those of traitors, all in harmony with the desires of the British Vandals, who, with Indian allies, were destroying the lives and the property of American citizens, and undoing the freedom won by Washington.

What we have said heretofore, we repeat, the descendants of the New England Puritans remained what their fathers were, when destroying Quakers and witches. They never were, and never will be, true Americans; but their power for evil, like their race, is rapidly dying out. A stronger people from Europe, kindreds of the first settlers, liberal, virtuous and patriotic, are pushing their descendants to the wall as American derelicts and discards from the Aryan family; a punishment not foreordained by the Almighty God, but produced by their own crimes against God, country and humanity.

The success of the revolutionary war caused the tories to leave the United States, many went to Canada, but the greater portion returned with the army to England. From 1783 to 1850 we received but few English immigrants. Previous to 1820 our

records are silent, but from 1820 to 1850 they show that we received from Europe 2,566,126 immigrants, of whom only 32,092 were English. Prof. Kirk, of Edinburgh, in *Social Politics in Great Britain and Ireland* (1870) says: "In 1815 the total emigration from the United Kingdom was only 2,081," and evidently they were principally Irish and Scotch, who had settled in England. As he further says: Up to 1847 Ireland sent the largest proportion and Scotland sent next, while England, with six times as many people as Scotland, sent but few emigrants till recent years. * * * The Irish emigration was so great that in 1851 the census revealed a deficiency in population amounting to 2,555,720. * * * In 1851, but more so in 1861, Scotland was found to be affected in a similar way, tho not to the extent of producing an actual decrease in the number of the people. Instead of an increase of from 12 to 13 per cent, there was only one of six per cent from 1851 to 1861. The rate of increase in England and Wales had not been sensibly affected. In the decade ending in 1850, while England sent us only 32,092 emigrants, Germany, Ireland, Scotland, Wales and France sent us 1,588,426, those from France being 77,262, exceed the English more than two to one. When we remember that many of the Colonial States and Territories were settled by the nations of Europe and that Washington's army was composed of many besides those of English descent, and connect them with the facts shown in our immigration records, how can we as patriotic and sane people say, that we are a branch of the Anglo-Saxon race?

The blood of Europe was nearly balanced in the veins of the American people when independence from England was gained in 1783; from that date to 1850 scarcely any English blood was added to the revolutionary stock, while other nations of Europe sent us 1,713,197 of their people to strengthen our blood and defend our freedom. Since 1850 Europe has further added to our stock 15,750,412 of its people, of whom only 1,805,202 came from England, many of whom were descendants of Irish and Scotch who had settled in England. The old patriotic fountain of American strength is today flowing with the invigorating blood of 9,694,761 people who came to us since 1841 from Germany, Ireland, Scotland and Wales, of whom nearly five millions were Germans, who love our free institutions and the maxims of the Declaration of Independence and are never found in organizations to disturb our tranquility or undermine our industry.

We take the following from the Chicago Tribune of July 31, 1904:

The reader of the literature of fifty years ago frequently runs across passages in which bad health and puny physiques are asserted or assumed to be characteristic of Americans. "We are a nation of health hunters," declared a writer in the Atlantic Monthly, October, 1858. "I am satisfied," wrote Dr. Holmes in his forcible way, "that such a set of black coated, stiff, soft muscled, paste complexioned youth as we can boast in our Atlantic cities never before sprang from Anglo-Saxon lineage." "Foreigners see in us a degenerate race," said George William Curtis in Harper's Magazine in 1856, "and

with them a skeleton frame, a yellow dyed, billious face, an uncomfortable, dyspeptic expression, an uneasy, spasmodic motion and of general ghost-like, charnal house aspect, serve to make up a type of the species Yankee." The same writer referred to the typical American college young man as "flitting like the ghost of a monk from his college cell to chapel or recitation hall." The ungallant Thackeray wrote to England that "most of the ladies" whom he had met in America "are as lean as greyhounds."

A remarkable improvement has taken place in the physique of the American race since these uncomplimentary descriptions of its members were written. Observe the men and women about you on the street, at church, at the theatre, in the car. Here and there you will see one who is fat and dropsical, or lean, pale, and dyspeptic. But a large portion of the men will be found ruddy and broad shouldered and a large share of the women will be pronounct plump and rosy. Our young men and women come from college not looking like ghosts of monks and nuns but so agile, healthy, and robust that fond parents who prefer learning to muscle grow apprehensive lest their offsprings are putting more into their legs and arms than they are into their heads. Americans as a race, probably, have better health and more physical vigor today than any other people in the world."

One cause of the remarkable betterment in American health is the betterment that has taken place in American personal habits. The excessive use of tobacco and liquors is far less common now

than it was fifty years ago. The American dietary and American cooking have improved. "I'll me d—d," said Dr. Abernathy to the Hon. Alden Gobble, "if I ever saw a Yankee that don't bolt his food like a boa constrictor." Americans who ape the deglutitory habits of the boa are much less numerous than they were in the time of the author of "Sam Slick," and, hard prest by the demands of health and decent manners, they are steadily growing fewer."

But no doubt the most potent cause of the improvement in American health and the American physique is the increased amount of fresh air and physical exercise. Gymnasiums, golfing links, baseball diamonds, football gridirons, lawn tennis courts, are so common now that one forgets that exercise for pleasure and health was practically unknown in America fifty years ago. Nobody walked. Nobody rode except on business. "As for any great athletic feat performed by any gentleman in these latitudes," wrote Dr. Holmes in 1858, "society would drop a man who should run 'round the common in five minutes." The first Harvard-Yale boat race took place in 1852. Organized field games were first held at Yale in 1872.

Physical vigor is a prime requisite of national as well as of individual achievement. The improvement that has taken place in the American physique is, therefore, one of the most interesting and important facts of the last half century of the country's history."

Those ruddy and broad shouldered men and the plump rosy women now found in our Atlantic

cities do not trace their lineage to the Puritan Yankees but to the red Irish blood that has been pushing the weakling aside since 1840 or to the vigorous German blood of 1848.

CHAPTER XIII.

AMERICAN PROGENITORS.

When the dawn of history gives us the first glimpse of men in organized society, we find them divided into arbitrary classes, under unequal laws enforced by the strong against the weak. That unjust system, unmitigated by the march of three thousand years, came down thru the ages from Egypt to Greece and Rome, then Continental Europe and England, and finally to America; but in crossing the Atlantic lost many of its evils. For nearly two centuries the feudal lords of England and France waged an intermitting war for the exclusive possession of the Atlantic shores of North America. Finally, in 1763, the English lords became the dominating force from the Atlantic to the Mississippi, and from Hudson's Bay to the Gulf of Mexico. During the long struggle of those feudal lords for the mastery of America, their serfs—the people—while doing the fighting, obtained some measure of their own strength, and practiced many of the natural rights of men.

No sooner had the English lords gained control of America, than they commenct devising means to reduce their American subjects to the old servile conditions of Europe. But God, in His infinite wisdom, had long before allowed feudalism to plant in America the seeds of its own destruction. With the first British colony at Jamestown came a number of indentured servants from Ireland, Scotland and

Wales— men and women of the Celtic race, with the spirit of freedom, tho dormant, still in their blood. For two centuries other men and women of the same race were forced to America as servants by their feudal masters; while many others voluntarily came as immigrants to be rid of Norman oppression in the land of their fathers.

In the course of years Teutonic men and women came as immigrants from the other nations of Europe to make new homes in the forests of America, where their benevolent desires for peace, industry and morality might be fully enjoyed, without paying tribute to inhuman lords. The affinity of race soon united the Celt and the Teuton in measures of defense against the inroads of wild Indians and ferocious animals, and against the encroachments of the feudal lords upon the personal rights of the people.

On each generation the sublime environments of cloud-capped mountains, grand rivers, placid lakes, majestic forests, and the life-giving sunshine of boundless prairies left their impress, aroused and brought into vigor the racial spirit of freedom in the hearts of both Celt and Teuton, which brushed aside the artificial distinctions of classes and casts and made America what she is today, a land of promise.

Providence reserved for the descendants of those indentured servants and immigrants, on a wild and unsettled continent, to challenge and destroy the demon of feudalism which in dim ages, under pretense of Divine authority, assumed a power that for more than three thousand years had submerged

the world with ignorance, superstition and misery. Fortune gave large shares in the work of 1776 to the Celts and Teutons, because they were here for many years in great numbers. Dutch and Swedes were on the Hudson and the Delaware more than fifty years before the English. In 1700 more than a thousand Scotch had settled in New York. In 1710 three thousand Germans settled in the valley of the Mohawk. In 1718 fifteen hundred or more Germans settled on the Arkansas. In 1716 five hundred Irish had settled on the frontier, while their countrymen had been scattering as servants and laborers thruout the colonies for more than fifty years. In 1737 Irish settled Williamsbury in the Carolinas. In 1733-6, Germans, Scotch and Irish settled in Georgia, and three hundred and seventy Swiss, under John Peter Pury, settled on the Savannah. In 1726 Patrick Gordon was Governor of Pennsylvania and drew large numbers of his countrymen to that colony. In 1764, German and Irish colonies settled in South Carolina. In the War for Independence there was one German and two Irish regiments under Gen. Rochambeau at Yorktown, commanded by Colonels Zweibrucken, Dillon and Walsh, many of whom remained in America or afterward returned and made it their home.

The American territory west of the Mississippi, from the lakes to the Gulf, was settled by the French and Spaniards; all aided America in winning its independence from England.

During the sixteenth, seventeenth and eighteenth centuries none but the bravest of the brave faced the dangers of the seas to make new homes amid

greater dangers from savage Indians and ferocious animals in the forests of America. Many of the leaders of the American cause, in 1776, could trace back several generations to some of those brave immigrants. They were the real sons of freedom to whom Americans may proudly point as their ancestors.

In 1815, on the plains of Chalmette, near New Orleans, England dearly paid for evidence of the strength of this brave ancestry, when she sent her fleet with a victorious host of ten thousand licentious and blood-thirsty veterans, under skilled generals, fresh from pillage and rape in Spain, to crush the young republic, and win back not only the territory lost to the arms of Washington, but the still vaster country of Louisiana, lately purchast by Jefferson from Napoleon. Hungering for blood, lust and plunder, that English host landed from their ships, amid the blare of trumpets, shouting their fiendish slogan, "beauty and booty," and advanc't on the sons of American freemen, expecting an easy victory over a foe that had just been described to them, by a London paper, called the "Sun," in the following words: "An army of Copper-captains and Falstaff-recruits, defying the pen of satire to paint them as they are, lying, treacherous, false, slandering, cowardly, vapping heroes. Were it not that the course of punishment they are about to receive is necessary to the ends of moral and political justice, we declare before our countrymen that we should feel ashamed of victory over such ignoble foes."

But that host of brutal braggarts had facing

them worthy sons of the men of 1776, commanded by Andrew Jackson, son of an Irish immigrant, with fewer than the number of the British. That the gods of all the ages were with the Americans on that memorable eighth day of January 1815 is evident by the losses—Americans, six killed and seventy wounded; British more than two thousand, among them the first and second in command dead, and the third severely wounded—the remainder of the army fled, defeated and disgraced, to their ships. Thus ended the second contest between American civilization and the Norman system of England for the mastery of America. May the third contest, now being waged, be equally as glorious for America. That this will be so we have the utmost confidence, because the American stock has been greatly strengthened by new blood since the battle of New Orleans. Two years before that battle, John Adams, in a letter to Thomas Jefferson, said that in Pennsylvania alone the Germans and the Irish had a majority over all others of more than 30,000. Between 1813 and 1860 both German and Irish immigrants continued to come to America in greater numbers than at any other time. The army and navy records show that during the Civil War 234,500 German-born and 221,500 Irish-born soldiers and sailors supported the Republic under the flag of the Union. America has now grown to manhood millions of the grandsons of those German and Irish soldiers, who, with their sons and grandsons, may be safely trusted to protect the work of their patriotic ancestors from the evil designs of the Anglo-American league.

Since 1865 Germany and Ireland have sent to America more than three millions of their sons and daughters. Now their sons and daughters are rearing young Americans who will be reliable citizens of the Republic and proud of both their native country and that of their forbears. Millions from other European nations have come and are coming to give strength to the beneficent ideals of the American Republic. It is claimed that New York, next to Budapest, has the largest Hungarian population in the world, and, next to Berlin and Vienna, the largest German population, while Chicago claims nearly 1,100,000 citizens speaking foreign tongues. Ireland has now fewer Irish than America. There are more Germans owning and cultivating farms in our middle states than there are Americans of the old stock. Italians have been coming for many years and are now adding a quarter of a million to our population annually. Slavs, Poles and Jews, in increasing numbers, are coming. The sons and daughters from all the races of Europe are coming, with their creeds and their languages, to find welcome and cheer under our flag, making the Republic, the world, and themselves better by their coming.

From this meeting, mingling and blending of blood and languages, God, in his infinite wisdom, is building up an ideal American race and an American language, to be for all time models of purity, strength and beauty in the world's civilization. The hand of God was visible in the work of Washington and the patriots of 1776, and crowned their labors with success. Who is now bold enough

to say that His hand is not directing the races to America, as He directed the Jews to the Land of Promise? God has been with America in both peace and war, and will remain with us as long as we sustain the inspired principles of the American fathers—the civic magnets that draw the races together.

The early white settlers in America were an amalgam produced in Europe nearly two thousand years ago by a friendly blend of the blood of German-Teutons and Gallic-Celts. Both families were the Aryan pioneers of Central and Western Europe where they made their homes from the earliest period. Both were agriculturists and home makers and in Pagan times worshiped the God of their fathers before the altars of the Druids. Both families are noted in history for large and robust physical frames and for daring and activity in battle. Both esteemed and honored their women. Both had triumphantly resisted the aggressions and finally defeated the legions of mighty Rome and laid its proud city in ashes. Both cherish truth as a duty to God and man and would sacrifice their lives to maintain their plighted words. This high sense of honor came to both as an Aryan inheritance. Men with such moral, mental and physical endowments are excellent material with which to found a nation and become the progenitors of a superior race of freemen to whom their descendants for thousands of generations as Americans will proudly trace their paternity.

We have shown in former pages how the Gallic-Celts for centuries gallantly defended their

island homes against the Roman legions; the Saxon pirates; the Robber Barons; the despotic combine of a Norman pope and king; and worst of all, the demon king, Henry VIII, who took to himself the functions of both state and church—pope and king.

In the year 12 B. C., the destroyers of the Roman Republic desired to extend their New Empire over the German tribes east of the Rhine and north of the Danube. For that purpose an army under Drusus commenct the invasion, but he died before accomplishing anything. In the year 9 B. C. Tiberius took command and overran Germany while his fleets subdued the coasts and the banks of navigable German rivers. He erected forts to hold the country and the better to hold the people in subjection introduced the laws and language of Rome. He then thot he had complete possession of the country, but the Germans quietly watcht for an opportunity to recover their independence which soon occurred when Varus succeeded Tiberius in command in 8 A. D. Varus had been proconsul of Syria and forgetting that he now had to deal with the freedom loving Germans and not with the servile Syrians whom he had been governing with an iron hand, his harsh and oppressive methods caused the Germans to rise in rebellion under the leadership of Hermann of the tribe of Cherusci. Herman had been educated in Rome and was familiar with Roman tactics and had been made a Roman Knight, but that did not diminish his German patriotism. When Hermann's plans were matured he caused Varus to be informed that a certain tribe in the north of Germany had revolted against Rome,

which lured Varus into the depths of the German forests with his legions, where he found his way blockt in a narrow valley by barricades of fallen trees and unexpectedly assailed by a shower of javelins from the hosts under Hermann, who had possession of the wooded heights on all sides which cut off all avenues of escape for Varus. The battle continued the following day. The Roman army was cut to pieces and their legions were totally destroyed. Varus was wounded and to escape capture committed suicide. The remaining captives were all sacrificed upon the altars of the German gods. The Roman garrisons thruout Germany were speedily overpowered and massacred and within a few weeks not a living Roman was to be found on German territory. Thus in the year 9 A. D., the valiant Hermann re-establisht the independence of Germany, having in a very brief campaign inflicted on the Roman arms the most complete defeat they ever sustained in all their wars of conquest.

The defeat of Varus product consternation and grief in Rome. It was deemed by the first Emperor Augustus, as a national catastrophe and a terrible blow to himself which caused him to exclaim in a paroxysm of grief: "Quintilius Varus! restore me my legions." It is said the consternation of the Roman people was intensified by the supernatural portents which accompanied the distaster; the Temple of Mars was struck by a thunderbolt; comets blazed in the heavens and fiery spears darted from the northward into the camp of the Praetorian Guards. A statue of Victory which stood on the

northern frontier of Italy facing in the direction of Germany was said to have turned on its own accord looking toward Rome.

The Romans under Tiberius renewed the war the following year, but only in retaliatory raids across the Rhine. Germanicus pursued a similar policy in 12 A. D. and 14 A. D., neither attempting conquest nor occupation. Augustus established the policy of recognizing the Rhine as the frontier between the German and Roman territories, and that was adopted by his successors for nearly five hundred years; when the tide of German conquest swept over both it and the Roman Empire leaving the latter in ruins on which were laid the foundations of the modern states of Europe.

The history of Europe tells us that the Celts and Teutons were noted as the defenders of liberty; that the amalgam of those Aryan families saved the fragments of civilization after the dark ages, laid the foundations of the modern states and sent America her first white settlers. A re-blending of the old Celtic-Teuton amalgam in the melting pots of American cities and farms, with the millions which have come from the same sections of Europe since 1776, and the swarms of liberty seekers that have joined them from the Slavic nations—Bulgarians, Hungarians, Poles and Russians have each strengthened and are yearly strengthening the new amalgam, infusing their blood and brain into the mighty race known to the world as Americans.

Besides those who voluntarily came with the Virginian and New England Colonies there were thousands transported by Cromwell from Ireland

as convicts and received by Governor Dale of Virginia who recommended: "That all those exiled convicts be kept up for three years and brought into military service. "They were not always the worst kind of men either for birth, spirit or body." All who opposed the butcheries and confiscations of Cromwell were criminals. He also transported between 1634 and 1641, large numbers of young Irish women, even wives and mothers, to become wives of old and young planters in Virginia. Hotten, the English historian, tells us that in September, 1653, the Council of the State licenst Sir Richard Nethersol to transport one hundred Irish tories to Virginia. The followers of Monmouth who escapt the cruelties of Jeffreys, were transported to Virginia as convicts, and all, both men and women, made excellent progenitors of the Americans of 1776.

Some historians assert that during the ten years succeeding the close of Cromwell's war in 1652, a hundred thousand young men and young women were transported to the American colonies. Griffis, in his work "Brave Little Holland and What She Has Taught Us"—says "In the Mayflower were one hundred and one men, women, boys and girls as passengers, besides captain and crew. These were of English, Dutch, French and Irish ancestry, and thus typical of our natural stock."

Wilson's "History of the American People" tells us that for several years after 1725, "immigration from the North of Ireland came crowding in, twelve thousand strong to the year. In 1729, quite five thousand of them entered Pennsylvania alone. From Pennsylvania they past along the broad in-

viting valley, southward, into the western part of Virginia."

During the years 1771 to 1774, twenty thousand, three hundred and fifty immigrants arrived at Philadelphia from Ireland. Ten vessels came from Britain with Scotch Highlanders. Vessels were arriving every month from Holland and Germany freighted with immigrants. These new Scotch, Irish, Dutch and German settlers left their love for Britain behind them in Europe. They were now in the service of the God of Liberty to defend his land of promise in America from the demons of British despotism.

Thomas Bond, British consul at Philadelphia reporting to the English foreign office in 1789, said: "The immigrants here since the conclusion of the war in 1783, have been much greater from Ireland than from all other parts of Europe. Of the 25,716 passengers, redemptioners and servants imported since the peace into Pennsylvania, 1,893 only were Germans; the rest consisted of Irish and a very few Scotch. Of 2,167 already imported in the present year 114 only were Germans; the rest were Irish. * * * I have not been able to obtain any account of the number of Irish passengers brought hither for any given series of years before the war, but from my own recollections I know the number was very great, and I have been told that in one year, six thousand landed at Philadelphia, Wilmington, and Newcastle upon the Delaware." The same year Ramsey, the historian, says: "The Colonies which now form the United States may be considered as Europe transplanted; Ireland, England,

France, Germany, Sweden, Poland and Italy furnisht the original stock of the population and have been supposed to contribute to it in the order named. For the last seventy or eighty years, no nation has contributed so much to the population of America as Ireland. "The Irish element formed more than one-third of the entire population at the close of the Colonial period. In South Carolina they constituted more than two-thirds of the 35,766 free white males shown by the census of 1790 and represented one thousand families of whom fifty bore the name of Murphy; forty-eight that of Kelly; the Gills and McGills numbered thirty-four; the O'Neills and Nealls thirty-three; the O'Briens, O'Bryans and Bryan fifty-three; the McCarty and other Macs made equally as great a showing; Sullivans twenty-eight; Reynolds twenty-three; Connors twenty-one; Bradley's forty-four.

Sim's "Life of General Marion" says: "The people of Williamsport were sprung generally from Irish parentage. They inherited in common with all the descendants of the Irish in America, a hearty detestation of the English name and authority. This feeling rendered them excellent patriots and daring soldiers whenever the British Lion was the object of hostility." In Virginia the Irish were equally as numerous.

It was an Irish-American, John Sullivan, who fired the first shot in the war for American independence, when he captured Fort William and Mary in New Hampshire, December, 1774.

John Hurley, of Litchfield, Conn., from whom we have before quoted as an expert Irish-American

scholar and historian, says: "The battle of Machias Bay was fought and won by Captain Jeremiah O'Brine on June 8, 1775. Six of the O'Brine brothers were in the engagement two of whom MacNiall and Coolbroth, were killed and John Berry, John Cole and Isaac Taft were wounded. That a sister of Captain O'Brine was the mother of John P. Hale, and that his brother John fitted out the privateer "Hibernia." That Captain John Barry was made a Commander of the American Navy by Washington and that his prizes in one voyage alone amounted to near \$3,000,000. And that Andrew Caldwell was Commodore of the Pennsylvania Navy and on May 8, 1776, repelled the attack of the British ships "Roebuck" and "Liverpool" in the Delaware. And that Captain Tracy swept the seas of English commerce, with his privateer, and from his private fortune contributed to the American government \$160,000. He also says: That during the Revolution and the war of 1812 the American-Irish gave more than 150 generals and naval commanders to the Republic, as well as the bulk of the fighting men on sea and land.

In 1775 besides planning a savage Indian campaign from Canada under William Johnston against his American subjects. George III planned a campaign for Sir Henry Clinton against Virginia and the Carolinas. Instructing Clinton to "conquer as he went." On June 28, 1776, Sir Peter Parker, with a fleet of nine ships carrying 340 guns, made an attack on Fort Moultrie, near Charleston, expecting an easy victory after a broadside or two; but the Irish-Americans under

Col. William Thompson with the Orangeburg riflemen, Clark's North Carolina "racoons" and Col. Muhlenberg's Virginia riflemen gallantly supported Col. Moultrie, and caused Parker after a bombardment of twelve hours to withdraw his fleet with two ships badly crippled and several of his men and officers killed or wounded.

Bancroft says: "This victory kept seven British regiments away from New York for two months; gave security to Georgia and three years peace to the Carolinas; dispelled thruout the South the dread of British superiority and drove the loyalists into shameful obscurity. It was an announcement to the other colonies of the existence of South Carolina as self-directing republic; a message of brotherhood and union."

The Irish-American victories at Fort William and Mary in 1774; Machias Bay in 1775 and at Fort Moultrie in 1776 were achieved before the Declaration of Independence and hastened its production. This immortal document was also supported by nine Irish-American names: Thomas McKean, Charles Carroll, Matthew Thornton, James Smith, Thomas Lynch, Jr., George Read, John Nixon, Edward Rutledge and George Taylor.

Thus Irish-Americans started the American Revolution, and, as a class maintained an honorable part from Fort William and Mary to Yorktown. They were the most potent influence in humbling English pride by dismembering her empire. The inhuman British crimes of seven centuries on Irish soil were punisht and avenged by men of Irish descent on the soil of America.

In 1771 the Society of the "Friendly Sons of St. Patrick" was organized in Philadelphia by Irish-Americans; it was composed of some of the most active and influential patriots of the country, including John Dickinson, Robert Morris, Thomas Fitzsimmons, Generals Washington, Wayne, Irvine Butler, Thompson, Hand, Cadwalader, Moylan, Knox and Stewart. Also Commodore Barry and other distinguished naval officers also men of the Cabinet and of Congress. Catholics, Presbyterians, Quakers and Episcopalians united as a band of brothers to vindicate the outraged rights of their adopted country.

The society gave a dinner in honor of General Washington and his suite at the City Tavern in Philadelphia January 1, 1782, at which the following gentlement were present:

His Excellency, General Washington; Gen. Lincoln, Gen. Stuben, Gen. Howe, Gen. Moultrie, Gen. Knox, Gen. Hand, Gen. McIntosh, His Excellency, M. Luzerne; M. Rendon; His Excellency, M. Hanson; Geo. Campbell, Esq., President; Mr. Thomas Fitzsimmons, V. P.; William West, Matthew Mease, John Mease, John Mitchell, J. M. Nesbit, J. Nixon, Samuel Caldwell, Andrew Caldwell, Mr. James Mease, Sharp Delany, Esq., Mr. D. H. Conyngham, Mr. George Henry, Mr. Blair McClenahan, Mr. Alexander Nesbitt, Mr. John Donaldson, His Excellency William Moore, Col. Muhlenberg, Col. French Tilghman, Col. Smith, Major Washington, Count Dillon, Count de la Touche, M. Marbos, M. Otto, Mr. Holker, Mr. John Barclay, Mr. James Crawford, Mr. John Patton, Mr.

James Caldwell, Mr. John Dunlap, Mr. Hugh Shiell, Mr. George Hughes, Mr. M. M. O'Brien, Jasper Moyland, Esq., Col. Ephraim Blaine, Col. Charles Stewart, Col. Walter Stewart, Col. Francis Johnson, Dr. John Cochran, Mr. William Constable, Henry Hill, Esq., Robert Morris, Esq., Samuel Meredith, Esq., 21 guests and 35 members.

The brilliant entertainment was graced by the presence of the bravest and most distinguished generals of the allied army of America and France, Gens. Washington, Lincoln, Howe, Moultrie, Knox, Hand, McIntosh and Baron Steuben, Cols. Washington, Smith, Tilghman, Count Dillon, French officer of Irish descent, and Count de la Touche. The French and Spanish Ministers, with their secretaries, etc., were also present.

It was given immediately after the final victory over British despotism and attested to future ages the value of Irish-American service in the seven years' struggle for the liberty of the American Continent.

English writers and New England puritans persistently and maliciously assert that the Irish race has remained a cypher in modern civilization, but the lying faculty has been so long dominating the British character it has lost the value of truth. We take the following refutation of one of their mendacious slanders from the "Kansas City Star," entitled:

"Some noted Irishmen, sons of the Emerald Isle, whose names stand high on the roll of fame: Since Prof. Goldwin Smith, the avowed enemy of the Irish, has at the 102d anniversary of the St. George So-

ciety, New York, considered it good taste to put forth his bigotry, and the splendid speaker Chauncey Depew meantime abandoned the toast 'The Genius of Shakspeare' to express his entire disapproval and opposition to the professor's sentiments, it may not be amiss to say something of the nationality to which I belong. 'Uninventive and imaginative' is the phrase unusually applied to the Irish. Well, they have imagination, I suppose, because it is a glorious thing, but can any one read the works of Edmund Burke, Richard Sheridan, Daniel O'Connell, Dean Swift, Thomas Moore, Oliver Goldsmith, and others all Irishmen, without seeing something real as well as imaginary? As to 'uninventive'—it was an Irishman's son, Robert Fulton, that gave to America the credit of inventing steam navigation; it was an Irishman's grandson, Samuel Morse, that invented telegraphy; it was the descendant of an Irishman, McCormick, that invented the reaping and mowing machines; and another descendant of an Irishman, Horace Greeley, with no meagre inventive talent, that founded the Tribune. Numerous names worthy of mention are connected with science: Crawford, the sculptor; Vincent Wallace, the composer; John Roach, the shipbuilder. The highest but one in rank in our army is Irish, and the second in command in our navy, Rowan, is a native of Ireland, as is the first in command, Porter, the descendant of an Irishman. The greatest British painter was Irish; the greatest British dentist, Joseph Black, was Irish; the greatest British philosopher, Robert Boyle, was Irish; the greatest British statesman, Edmund Burke, was Irish; the greatest British satirist, Sir

Philip France, was Irish; the greatest British naturalist, Hans Sloane, was Irish. John Tyndall is not a British scientist, but an Irish scientist in Britain. Spranger Barry an Irish tragedian is entertaining British with Irish plays. It was an Irishman, John Knox, that first read the Declaration of Independence. John Dunlap, an Irishman, first published that declaration, and the same John Dunlap first printed and published the first daily paper in the United States. An Irishman wrote the first history of the United States; John Sullivan 'fired the first shot at the King's power;' John Barry, an Irishman, was the first commander of the American navy. An Irishman, Gen. Richard Montgomery, fell while commanding an American army and fighting for American independence. Henry Knox, an Irishman, fought in every battle with Washington, and was first Secretary of War. The Demosthenes of the Revolution, Patrick Henry, was Irish. Then may glory be around the graves of the Knoxes, Clintons, Butlers, Irvings, Hands, Starks, Moylands, Thompsons, Sullivans, Montgomerys' and Waynes, whose Irish swords flashed in the contest that won American independence, and bright be the light that clusters around the solitary ray of English patriotism that glistened on the blade of Yates. McClellan, McPherson, McCook, famous Phil Kearney, Lee, Jackson, Scott, Cleburne, McDowell, Rowan, Porter, Shields, and Logan are all Celts, and why not pay a passing tribute to our own Irish hero of Winchester—Phil Sheridan? We, the people of the United States, are said to be Anglo-Saxon. We are not, but are in a truer sense of Celtic extraction.

The great branch of the Anglo-Saxon amounts to no more than 5,000,000. The Celtic element is 30,000,000. Of the thirty-nine States and eleven Territories more than thirty were settled by France and Spain. Nor were the original thirteen States settled by Saxons. These are historical facts, and yet Prof. Goldwin Smith quarrels with home rule and the conduct of the members of the House of Commons. To be brief, these same members are admitted to be the brightest set of legislators in the world; but Mr. Smith says ~~that~~ altho they legislate for England they are unequal to the task of legislating for Ireland."

The Celtic blood that made those men noted and placed them as leaders at the head of modern civilization has been vastly strengthened since 1776, in the American Melting Pot, by the blood of tens of millions of Teutons from German States of Europe. Their descendants in 1915 whether hyfenated as Irish-Americans or German-Americans are nearly to a man Loyal-Americans, and not found in the treasonable league of hyfenated Anglo-Americans; founded in July 1898 by the Queen and Parliament of England, aided by John Hay, Whittaw-Reid and Lyman Abbott to destroy the work of the immortal Washington and patriots of 1776.

The British mandacious batteries that have been pounding the Irish character since 1154 has been turned against the Germans since the formation of this Anglo-American League in 1898, but the civilized nations of the world, especially America, know by dearly bought experience the small value of British words in friendship or enmity.

CHAPTER XIV.

INHERITANCE.

Nations, like individuals and families, are influenced for good or for evil by the religious moral and political methods practiced by their founders. That like will physically produce like, or the likeness of some ancestor, is now recognized by philosophy as a universal law of nature, from the influence of which neither plant, animal, nor man can escape. That the same law stamps its evil or its good impress on the justice and the morality of nations is too well illustrated to be doubted, when we compare British social conduct and political methods with those practiced by the founders and the citizens of the American Republic.

The political, the moral, and the social systems of the British Empire are still maintained by the unequal, unjust and degrading feudal laws forced on the subject by William of Normandy and his marauding band of French adventurers, whose descendants still dominate in the affairs of the Empire and its colonies. The court of George V may be a little more refined and reserved in its moral conduct than that of the first William, over eight hundred years ago, but the social scandals and the disgusting records of modern British divorce cases show that the present George and his court have not gotten very far away from the immoral inheritance left to the nation by William I, who was himself the progeny of social depravity. Wil-

William's Domesday Book is the chart of British civilization which has guided the kingdom founded by him, from his day to the present time, and sent his descendants out in the world as aggressors on the weak.

Turn from William and his followers to Washington, Jefferson, Adams, Otis, and their inspired and patriotic compeers, who gave to the world the self-evident truths of the Declaration of Independence, as a divine chart to guide humanity to a higher civilization. Contemplate well the cruel and immoral characters of William and his followers, which may be traced by the blood of murdered kindred, of both sexes,—friends and foes alike—thru all the centuries. Compare them, under all lights, with the pure morality, the Christian characters, and the sympathetic natures of Washington and his companions, and with their work in the cause of humanity. As an American you will feel your heart thrill with pride as you fully comprehend the psychological inheritance which was left in your keeping by the Christian, sympathetic and moral founders of the American Republic; who as lovers of domestic purity and as champions of freedom, justice, peace and good will among men, stand without peers in the history of the world. You will also feel that it would be a crime against both God and man to even suggest affinity between their beneficent lives and purposes and the evils of William and his followers; or that the Republic can now safely depart from the grand principles of civic equality which those pure and inspired patriots, under the direction of God, placed in the chart of American liberty.

Anglo-Saxon System Not Civilization.

What is this civilization of which Earl Gray and others are so loudly boasting, and of which they say England and America are the joint trustees, traveling hand in hand and shoulder to shoulder in the development and attainment of common ideals? There is no Anglo-Saxon civilization, and never was, unless debauchery, assassination and murders can be called civilization.

While there is not an Anglo-Saxon civilization to the credit of England, there is an Anglo-Norman system to which she is fully entitled; a system that has robbed the people of Ireland, Scotland and Wales of their lands; debauched and degraded their peoples and scattered them as homeless outcasts among the nations, and won for England the appropriate title of "Perfidious Albion." This system was founded by William, of Normandy, the bastard son of a low Celtic woman. The moral influence of William's parentage was imparted to his system of government; it may be traced by lusts, assassinations and murders thruout the ages, its depravity gaining strength with the years until it blossomed in 1675 in the Palace of Charles II and bore fruit from the strumpets of Mrs. Palmer, Moll Davies and Nell Gwynn, and again in June, 1906, into the noxious blooms of drunkenness, lust and theft in the Empress Club London, which was founded in commemoration of the sixtieth anniversary of the crowning of Victoria, and composed of the British swell set, with their disguised menmaids, a president and twenty vice-presidents, every one a peeress. It also blossomed in the mansions of

the nobility on the Thames, its blooming was described to Americans by a London dispatch of September 22, 1906, where drunkenness, gambling and leap-frogging, by both sexes, are described as usual Sabbath Day diversions. Where, amid roars of laughter, women at dinners empty their finger-bowl slops down the necks of men, who in turn empty their whiskey and soda glasses into the bosoms of the women. A later dispatch told us on December 13, 1906, that the Norman system was also blooming in Scotland, where a gang of "giddy aristocratic matrons and their frisky blue-blooded daughters," are described as having taken possession of the premises of their hostess—the Bradley-Martins—and seizing the wardrobes of the male guests, with which they decorated the garden bushes, also seized a writing-case and held it until its owner promised each one a dozen pairs of gloves of the latest style, reaching well above the elbows and costing \$4.50 a pair; the man yielding because the case contained letters from a lady friend which he did not want "a rowdy, vulgar, black-mailing crew of huzzies to read."

The London dispatches of June 22, 1906, telling America of the moral and financial bankruptcy of the Empress Club, mentioned Lord Chas. Beresford as saying that "English society was eaten out with the canker of money, and rotten from top to bottom." And so say Father Vaughn and the Rev. Dr. Townsend in late sermons on British society. The foregoing sketches of British civilization are not drawn by us, but by English artists. Americans have reason to thank God that their country is

filled with even "an unredeemable middle class," who are still strangers to those general debaucheries practiced in London, and on the bank of the Thames, and at the Bradley-Martins in Scotland, reflecting the rotten inward life of Anglo-Norman civilization. It has no resemblance to the civilization that Americans received from George Washington, the founder of their republic. The American system has running thru all of its fibers the vitalizing germs of virtue and refinement, and touches its own people and the peoples of the nations only to improve and elevate them; while that of William of Normandy, in England, as well as in Ireland, Scotland and Wales; in India, China and Africa, touch only to rob, blight and corrupt their peoples. The high-flying smart set in New York do not represent the society of America, but that of London, where they spend their money and more than half of their time.

In a history of Britain's First Families, in the Chicago Tribune, of June 7, 1914, appeared thirty-four photos of the descendants of Nell Gwyn and other court harlots, who became the mothers of eighteen known bastards, and many not known. Such sensual depravity was not equaled even by the pagans in the debauched Medean Court at Sardis, twenty-one centuries before.

The cry of despair from British scientists to "Wake Up England" falls on the ears of dullness in a deteriorating nation of drunken mothers, as shown by the immense numbers of their sons who were rejected as unfit army recruits for failing to

meet the requirements in stature and chest measurements for the Boer war.

For more than a century and a quarter American institutions have been drawing from England the choicest of her people, leaving her the dregs to multiply in the dens of depravity in the slums of London. The British revenue system, which encourages intemperance, is doing for England what her opium trade is doing for China—sapping her vitality. From what section of her empire can she draw new blood to restore her lost vitality and energy? Must it come from Africa? A few of the vain, weak-minded daughters of America, as wives, are giving some vigor to the blood of her title-bearing class, but the brave sons of America are not seeking British wives of high or low station. A deteriorating, under-sized, narrow-chested, whisky-poisoned race, two generations behind a vigorous race, physically and mentally, like the Germans, must accept the decrees of violated nature, and remain as inferiors in the rear of progress until absorbed or destroyed by their superiors.

The pride and moral worth of both families and nations are produced and maintained by women. In a study of the lives of the great men of America it is found that their high purposes were inspired and nurtured by great mothers. It is doubtful if any nation in the old world has now as pure women as America. Is there any danger that the purity of American woman will be corrupted by the evil example and the growing intimacy with the besotted nobility of England? Yes, a very great danger, unless the enemy is guarded against. Lady Henry

Somerset, president of the World's Woman's Christian Temperance Union, was lately in America. On her arrival in New York, she was reported in the Associate Press dispatches as saying: "Drunkenness is on the increase in England. I am really ashamed to tell the American people in what a deplorable state the United Kingdom is. It has become a nation of drunkards. It seems hopeless to work for its reformation. The increase in intoxication at home is the spread of the drink disease among woman."

This is a horrible indictment—a nation of drunkards caused by the drink disease of its women—and symptoms of the disease spreading among the women of America. No, Lady Somerset, not among the women of America, but the vain creatures of New York city, who are being socially and politically corrupted by the men and women of London. Nothing good and noble can come from a nation of drunken women. It is the parting from the ways of civilization to the depraved instincts of the beast.

We look to the women of America as the guardian angels of our national greatness. The women on the American farms and in the innumerable villages and inland cities of our Republic will be the mothers and moral teachers of the men who will beneficently dominate the future civilization of the world for thousands of years after the empire of drunkards has disappeared from the earth.

The women of America will be the better able to perform their destined work by becoming thoroly Americanized, by knowing and appreciating the fact

that they are the proud daughters of a new American race, blended in an atmosphere of morality and freedom on the soil of America from the best and purest of the races of the world, and inspired by the generous ideas of all nations blended in the words and ideas of their own American language.

Professor Weihrle, the eminent German philosopher, of Berlin, a teacher of ethics and of art, has described the women of the new American race, as the most perfect type of womanhood in the world. He portrays the women seen in the streets of American cities as possessing a graceful lightness and ease of bearing, entirely their own, of quick mercurial movements, and tender roundness of limbs seen only in America, whose women resemble one's conception of what fairies, sylphs, nymphs and angels ought to be; and such as Raphael would paint. He also says:

"The American women are exceptionally energetic and decided. Their characters have every good quality which goes to make a perfect woman. Free from excessive modesty, their practical ability enables them to face every difficult situation in which they find themselves."

Such are the mothers of the American race; the perfect American woman, the goddess of pure homes, where the men of the world's future are nurtured and taught in the American language, their duty to God, country and family. A beneficent inheritance to the American Republic.

That America has now but little in common with England was admitted at a Fourth of July banquet

in London by Henry Mortimer Durand, late Ambassador at Washington, who said:

"It is hard on an occasion of this kind to avoid indiscretion or gush, but facts are facts. England and America are friends; we will thank God and leave it at that. We are no longer one nation, and however much we may regret it, we are no longer one people. There is not much English blood left in the veins of the greater part of the nation. We would be better friends if we would recognize the facts and learn to regard each other for what we are. Englishmen are apt to forget these facts and be carried away in the idea of community of language and interests."

CHAPTER XV.

CANADIAN DESTINY.

The pilfered Northwest Territory now constitutes the most valuable section of Canada and in late years has been filling up with American farmers and business men who consider not only the portion pilfered, but the whole country north of the Lake or the Woods from the Atlantic to the Pacific, as trust property in the temporary possession of Irish, Scotch, Welsh and French descendants, who are looking forward to the time when they too, will be considered as belonging to the American race and protected by its flag.

Previous to the Declaration of Independence England kept her American colonies in constant wars with their Dutch, French and Spanish neighbors, making New York and Boston the bases of her attacks on the Canadian-French; using Americans as the principal land force in the attack and capture of Quebec, which enabled the wily mistress of deception and civic discord to plant and cultivate seeds of political and religious hatred in the breasts of the Canadian-French against the American Puritans, both of whom, Britain intended to enslave. While Puritanic hatred festered in the Canadian heart, England treacherously turned her arms against her American colonies to reduce them to the condition of serfs, a condition previously designed for Canada. The Americans resisted; armed for freedom, and instead of becoming planta-

tion slaves, won the crown of independence for themselves and dedicated America to freedom.

During the unequal contest in which the gallant Lafayette and other French officers with an army and a navy joined the Americans; the Canadian-French because of hatred for the Puritans offered neither aid nor sympathy, but became a base for British depredations, where the savages of the northwest were gathered, trained and turned loose upon the women and children of America. During the war of 1812, Canada played the same part.

Only a few years ago (1896-1897) England sent army and naval officers to induce Canada to provide naval squadrons for her Admiralty at Halifax and Esquimaux; and to raise her military forces to the level of British efficiency at such points as Niagara, Quebec, Montreal and Vancouver. The French of Quebec and the new American settlers of the west, wisely defeated this proposition by a counter movement favoring a union of Canada and America. The French and the new American settlers have no desire to bring to this continent the constantly disturbing and degrading military systems which have crushed and brutalized the people of Europe.

Destiny links the civic welfare of Canada with America. For more than a century the sons and daughters of Canada have found generous welcome in the homes of the Republic. They are annually coming by tens of thousands, and no friend of freedom on either side of the line will erect military barriers to keep them apart. Forts and arsenals should be dismantled instead of strengthened, and the same starry flag should and will eventually

protect the homes of all. The sweat of the people, and frequently their blood, pays the cost of standing armies and flying squadrons. America and Canada united, would have no use for them. Their sons would have better occupations in cultivating fields, developing mines, operating factories, extending commerce, increasing schools and churches, rather than in cultivating the brutalizing spirit of aggressive warfare.

American naval preparations are not intended to injure the lives or property of Canada, nor to deprive her of self-government. They are forced on America by the immense warships of Europe, which in the hands of such notorious aggressors on the rights of defenseless nations as are the English, would be a constant menace to the peace and liberty of others. It is not necessary for Canada to tax her citizens to erect military barriers between herself and America, or to equip dreadnaughts at the behest of Earl Grey, and other foreign tax-eaters who would forge chains for Canadian limbs as cheerfully as they would for those of America. The government of England has changed but little since the days of George the Third, when it stained the fields of Canada with French blood; then turned loose the horrors of savage warfare to desolate the homes of America and stain her fields with fraternal blood. What England did between 1754 and 1783, has been repeated every year since in India, Africa and China and would be repeated here tomorrow if America were not prepared to defend herself and neighbors against England's aggressions.

The circulars that were distributed in Canada

during the talk of annexation in 1896, appealing to the religious prejudice of the people to stand by their sovereign queen and empress and suppress the Catholics who favored annexation, as enemies of liberty, was simply repeating her system of "divide and conquer;" the method by which Britain degraded the people of Ireland. Whether annexed or established as an independent republic, Canada has nothing to fear from America. In either position, the great Republic will extend the warm hand of friendship, peace and concord to her northern sister, and bid her people an American-welcome to their destined place, in the family of freedom. The citizens of the Canadian provinces are as capable of self-government as are those of the states south of them. The fiction of the divine authority of a few to rule the many, was punctured by America with the Declaration of Independence and sent into the shades of oblivion to rest forever.

Instead of unfriendly armies and flying squadrons threatening the peace and disturbing the industries on Puget Sound, the St. Lawrence and the Northern Lakes, let peace extend its blessings, and intelligence direct the people in the ways of order and justice. Let the waters of our inland seas be disturbed only by the keels of mutual commerce in free and profitable intercourse, and their waves break on the friendly shores of a common country.

During the years 1893-1894, responding to the Canadian desire for annexation, a number of prominent Americans, among whom were John Hay, William C. Whitney, John D. Long, Elihu Root, Cornelius N. Bliss, Henry Cabot Lodge,

Theodore Roosevelt, President Charles Eliot, Hamilton Fish, Chauncey M. Depew, George Hoadly, Thomas C. Platt, Hugh J. Grant, O. H. Havemeyer, Paul Dana, Andrew Carnegie, John Jacob Astor, Seth Low, Russell Sage, George J. Gould, James R. Keene, D. O. Mills, Collis P. Huntington, August Belmont, Charles Francis Adams, Andrew H. Green, and more than seven hundred others, formed a National Continental Union League, to promote by all lawful, peaceful and honorable means, a political union between United States and Canada: "Believing that the extension of the boundaries of the United States from the Gulf of Mexico to the Arctic sea, and from Newfoundland to Vancouver, will not only secure the rapid development but likewise promote the happiness and best interest of all the people; materially lessen the per capita cost of government and defense and be preservative of the peace of both North and South America, and of the world."

Writing of the movement; one of its members, Andrew H. Green, the father of Greater New York, said: "The most important event to humanity of the eighteenth century, was the birth of this Republic, with the declaration of the inalienable right of man to life, liberty and the pursuit of happiness; and of the nineteenth century, its preservation, with the recognition of the absolute equality of all men before the law without regard to race, religion, color, social or financial position. The crowning event of the coming century will be its extension from Newfoundland to Vancouver, and from the Gulf of Mexico to the Arctic Sea, including Hawaii upon the

west, and all the islands upon the east, which, as satellities to a planet, belong to North America. This Republic will then be the dominant English-speaking power, impregnable to attack from any combination of powers which can be organized to assail it, and be enabled thereby to command the peace of the world. I look hopefully for the good time when every man and woman will be at liberty to go when and where he or she pleases on this globe without hindrance or molestation, so long as they are obedient to the law. The mission of this Republic is "peace upon earth; good-will toward men." The peaceful consummation of the continental union will enable it to fill its glorious mission."

The annexation movement in Canada, dates back to the rebellion of 1837 for the establishment of a republic and annexation to the United States, which forced from England, a more liberal form of government for Canada. Dr. Frechette, the French-Canadian poet, in a Buffalo newspaper, gave expression to the annexation feeling of the people of Quebec, saying that there ought to be only one flag on the continent, and that flag, the Stars and Stripes. The doctor at time was clerk of the Legislative Assembly of the Province of Quebec, and moved in the best society. He also stated that while the French did not dislike the English, their sympathies were with the United States. Upon official inquiry, it was found that Dr. Frechette express the sentiments of a large body of his people; especially of the young men who have friends and relatives employed in the mills and woods south of the line; who are

Americanized French-Canadians and missionaries of republican and annexation principles.

To check this annexation movement, Lord Dundonald was sent to Canada. At Toronto, he openly charged the Canadian ministry with indifference and inefficiency in preparing fortifications and militia for the defense of the Dominion, and that he was there to satisfy the mother country that Canada was discharging her obligations faithfully. This caused a storm of protests, which forced Dundonald's recall, and brought a smoother governor-general, Earl Grey, to delude both Canada and America with promises of a wonderful future as British twins, leading the world in the ways of peace.

That Earl Grey was an expert in juggling the words of delusion, was manifested at Ottawa where he assured the Canadians that if the nineteenth century, as stated by Mr. Green, belonged to the United States, the twentieth century would belong to Canada. He then hurried to a Pilgrim dinner of American traitors at the Waldorf-Astoria and repeated his Ottawa statement. He flattered President Roosevelt for the magnificent traits of character he was constantly displaying, which were admired and appreciated by the British Empire. He held that Canada scouted all ideas of annexation as much as would the United States, the idea of being annexed to Canada. He said there are 2,827,000 persons of Canadian birth or descent in this country and that French-Canadians founded Chicago, St. Louis, Pittsburgh, New Orleans, Detroit, St. Paul and Milwaukee. (He failed to say that the founda-

tions were mere trapper's camps). "If Canada can proudly claim that she has been privileged to lend a hand to the building of the United States, she is also conscious that there is not a day on which she does not feel the influence of the example, guidance and inspiration of the United States.

The American guidance and inspiration are the magnets that will draw America and Canada to their destiny in a Continental Union which will defend the interests of a continent, and by continued good example, give peace to the world. If this union is not produced by the inspiration of the United States, it is certain to come as a matter of defense to both countries. The insulting demands of Japan for unusual privileges in Alaska, British Columbia, California and the Pacific Islands and Mexico will force the Aryan races of North America into a Continental Union to save their Christian Civilization from being Orientalized and destroyed by England's Asiatic hordes led by Japan.

CHAPTER XVI.

THE AMERICAN LANGUAGE.

While nine-tenths of the American people are descended from Dutch, German, Irish, Scotch and Welsh ancestors, as the dominating blood, blended with a strong infusion of the blood of Sweden, France, Italy, Spain, Switzerland, Portugal, Poland and Hungary and a small percentage claiming pure English descent, (a Teuton-Celtic amalgam of Franco-Normans with the Celts of Ireland, Scotland and Wales) yet, the American schools and libraries are being flooded by the Anglo-American League with specially prepared English literature, glorifying Americans as a branch of the Anglo-Saxon race, which we have elsewhere shown, disappeared as serfs and menials, more than eight hundred years ago. We have reached the point where we must guard the mental, moral and patriotic development of our American children, against the British poison which is being systematically and specially prepared by book publishers to destroy their love of country and fit them to become willing subjects and tools of a foreign despotism.

Before the formation of the Anglo-American League in 1898 by the King and Parliament of England, to replace in the British Crown the lost jewel—America, the writers and orators of both Old and New England waxed loud and eloquent in claiming the citizens, language and free institutions

of America as representing the Anglo-Saxon race, but now the world hears no more of that loud eloquence. The Anglo-Saxon race, has been relegated to its days of serfdom, and a new "English-Speaking Race" has been given the seat of honor in all banquet halls, chambers of commerce and Pilgrim-club-feasts. This change evidently, was made to cover 10,000,000 colored American citizens, whose forbears the English government in Colonial Days stole in Africa and forced on America as slaves. But this new delusion will go the way of the Anglo-Saxon. America was pre-empted in 1776 by George Washington, for the sons of freedom whose descendents are now in possession and known the world over as Americans who are gathering the best words and thots of all nations into a sprightly language of their own—the American—which is destined to be the standard language of civilization.

We can judge from a school book published and recommended by the MacMillan Company in 1907, entitled "Seven Ages of Washington," what sort of literature will be forced on the children of America in Earl Grey's new school readers. One extract will illustrate all: "How many Americans know, for instance, that England was at first extremely lenient to us; fought us until 1778 with one hand in a glove and an olive branch in the other; had any wish but to crush us; had no wish save to argue us back into the fold, and enforce argument with an occasional victory not followed up."

Another school book concern has mutilated our National Anthem "The Star Spangled Banner," by omitting the third stanza.

The Star-Spangled Banner.**I.**

Oh! say, can you see, by the dawn's early light,
What so proudly we hail'd at the twilight's last
gleaming?
Whose broad stripes and bright stars, thru the
perilous fight
O'er the ramparts we watch'd, were so gallantly
streaming.
And the rockets red glare, the bombs bursting in
air,
Gave proof thru the night that our flag was still
there.

Chorus.

Oh! say, does that star-spangled banner yet wave
O'er the land of the free and the home of the
brave?

II.

On the shore dimly seen thru the mists of the deep,
Where the foe's haughty host in dread silence re-
poses,
What is that which the breeze, o'er the towering
steep,
As it fitfully blows, half conceals, half discloses?
Now it catches the gleam of the morning's first
beam,
In full glory reflected, now shines on the stream.

Chorus.

'Tis the Star-Spangled Banner, Oh! long may it
wave
O'er the land of the free and the home of the brave.

III.

And where is that band who so vauntingly swore,
That the havoc of war and the battles confusion
A home and a country should leave us no more?
Their blood has wash'd out their foul footsteps
pollution.

No refuge could save the hirling and slave
From the terror of flight or the gloom of the grave.

Chorus.

And the Star-Spangled Banner in triumph doth wave
O'er the land of the free and the home of the brave.

IV.

Oh! thus be it ever, where freemen shall stand,
Between their loved home and wild war's desolation,
Bles't with vict'ry and peace, may the heav'n res-
cued land

Praise the pow'r that hath made and preserved us
a nation.

Then conquer we must, when our cause it is just,
And this be our motto, "In God is Our Trust."

Chorus.

And the star-Spangled Banner in triumph shall wave
O'er the land of the free and the home of the brave.

This criminal omission was made, as explained by the publishers, Genn & Co., "to make our books generally acceptable and satisfactory." To whom? Why England and the Puritan Pilgrims, of course. This soul-stirring American anthem was written by Francis Kay, of Baltimore, while detained on the

British man-of-war *Menden* during the bombardment of Fort McHenry, where he went to secure the release of his friend, Dr. Beanes, a distinguished citizen of Maryland, whom the British took prisoner after burning and sacking Washington. While pacing the enemy's deck, between midnight of the thirteenth and dawn of the fourteenth of September, 1814, amid the excitement expressed in the first stanza, the anthem was composed by the inspired author.

To enshrine the author's memory in the hearts of America and "Praise the Power that made and preserved us a nation," the one hundredth anniversary of the Star-Spangled Banner was celebrated at Baltimore, from the sixth to the thirteenth of September, 1914, under the auspices of the following:

Centennial Commission.

Honorary Presidents: Woodrow Wilson, William H. Taft, Theodore Roosevelt; Honorary Vice-Presidents: Thomas R. Marshall, Champ Clark, Admiral George Dewey, Gen. Leonard Wood. Gov. Phillips Lee Goldborough, of Maryland, and the governors of the other seventeen states forming the union in 1814: Simeon E. Baldwin, Connecticut; Charles R. Miller, Delaware; J. M. Slaton, Georgia; James B. McCreary, Kentucky; Luther E. Hall, Louisiana; David I. Walsh, Massachusetts; Samuel D. Felker, New Hampshire; Jas. F. Fielder, New Jersey; Martin H. Glynn, New York; Locke Craig, North Carolina; James M. Cox, Ohio; John K. Tenner, Pennsylvania; Aram J. Pothier, Rhode Island; Cole L. Blease, South Carolina; Ben. W. Hooper, Tennessee; Allen M. Fletcher, Vermont; Menry T. Stuart, Virginia.

Besides the governors of the Seventeen States that formed the Union in 1814, those of thirty-one states admitted since, and the Territorial Governors of Alaska, Hawaii, Porto Rico and The Philippines, by invitation, were present with their staffs and large delegation of patriotic citizens. Also the mayors of more than five hundred cities, extending from the Atlantic to the Pacific, and between the Gulf and Puget Sound, accompanied by numerous delegations.

Down in the Baltimore channel, where the British ship *Minden* swung at anchor a century ago, a great buoy was placed standing thirteen feet above the water line, a foot for each of the original states: the apex painted blue, and spangled with fifteen stars. Fifteen red and white stripes covered the body. The old American warship *Constitution* floated the flag that waived at "the dawn's early light" over Fort McHenry, which inspired Key to thrill the soul of America with The Star-Spangled Banner. The rents made in the old flag by the British cannon balls during the night of September 13, 1814, were repaired by the fair "Daughters of the Republic" in Baltimore.

For an entire week, the soul of America held Communion with the spirits of 1776 and with that of Francis Scott Key, the inspired farmer boy of "Terre Rubra," Carroll County, Maryland, author of The Star-Spangled Banner, the Sacred Anthem of The American Republic.

In the presence of the diplomats of the world assembled in Baltimore, the officers of the national and the State Governments, of the Army and the Navy, with the representatives of the people, paid

homage to the memory of the author, by prayers, oration and joyous festivities which were repeated by tens of millions of children in schools and churches thruout the Republic. After numerous parades, pageants, regattas, athletic contests and social functions, each commencing and ending with the American Anthem, whose delightful strains were taken up at the end of the week by American war-ships assembled in the Baltimore Channel and sent on vibrating air around the world, as the song of freemen in a mighty roar from the mouths of their cannons, saluting the Star-Spangled Banner, the victorious flag of Fort McHenry.

The evil influence of that MacMillan book appeared in the schools of California in January of 1912 which caused the State Senate by a unanimous vote to adopt the following resolutions:

Whereas, At a recent meeting of the Sacramento County Teachers, Institute, held in the Capital City of California, a statement was made in a public address by an ex-Superintendent of the County Schools of Santa Barbara County, to the effect that Great Britain had not performed one tyrannical act to provoke the Revolutionary War; that the Boston Massacre was not the slaughter it was supposed to be; that the Stamp Acts were justified, and the Colonists' refusal to pay them actuated solely by a desire to evade a just proportion of their expenses in this country; and that the Boston Tea Party consisted of irresponsible Colonists bent on malicious mischief; and, operating under the guise of patriotism, wrongfully and maliciously to destroy the property of others; and

Whereas, It would appear this is taught in some of the High Schools of this State, and is said to be taught at the University of the State of California; and

Whereas, Such teachings practically declare that this Government was erected upon a foundation of wrong and error; that the Declaration of Independence states those things which are not true, and that immortal document is therefore a farce, a fraud and a delusion; and that this Government "of The People, for The People and by The People," in its elemental construction was based upon false and fraudulent pretenses; and,

Whereas, Such teachings of disloyalty, if permitted to take root in this country, would inevitably create a race of citizens lacking in that stern and unyielding patriotism without which no country can long endure; therefore, be it

Resolved, By the Senate of the State of California, the Assembly concurring, That these utterances are false and untrue; that they are in every sense in manifest contradiction to the true history of the birth of our country, and subversive of the very foundation principles of our Government,

Resolved, That it is the sense of the members of this Legislature that if there be histories included in the curricula of public institutions of the State of California which put forth such grossly false and disloyal ideas, such histories should be eliminated from the schools of the State in every such institution; and in every place there should be substituted not only truthful narratives of the origin of this Government and of the episodes leading thereto, but

narratives at the same time tending to sow in the hearts and in the souls of the boys and girls of this State that burning devotion to country which these disloyal histories would minimize, if they did not smother.

Resolved, That it is the sense of the members of this Legislature that if there be teachers employed in the school department of California, from the kindergarten up to and including the State University, who have taught such false, disloyal and iniquitous doctrines, each and every one of them should be forever weeded out of any position as instructor in the schools of this State.

Resolved, That His Excellency Hon. Hiram W. Johnson, Governor of the State of California, be and he is hereby respectfully requested to inaugurate at his earliest convenience an investigation into such matters; and it is further

Resolved, That if he finds that statements of the character referred to above are contained in the histories used in the public educational institutions of California, he take such steps as he may deem requisite to proscribe such histories and interdict their use in such institutions; and that, if he find that any teachers in public educational institutions of California, from the kindergartens up to and including the State University, are teaching such false and disloyal and iniquitous doctrines—or even encouraging such doctrines to be taught—he shall take such measures as he may deem requisite to weed forever such traitors out of the school system of California.”

The printing companies who are doing this

mining and sapping of American institutions in our schools, are catering to and promoting, British interests as they maintain branch houses in London, Bombay, Calcutta, Melbourne and Toronto. Their literature is Anti-American, and in self defense it should be as rigidly excluded from the homes and schools of America, as ours is officially excluded from the schools and homes of England.

Only recently, a sub-committee, reporting to the Education Committee of the London County Council, presenting a revised list of books for the school-lending libraries, struck from the list, the biographies of Abraham Lincoln, Benjamin Franklin, George Washington and the book "From Log Cabin to White House." John Pender of the committee said that the "books were objectionable because they were written in American, and extremely bad American at that."

America or American is a nightmare on the mind of the average Englishman—any other name but one of these. We have been informed by one of these cockney gentlemen in the columns of Harper's Weekly, that our use of these words is improper and will be resented in Canada, Mexico, Brazil and Argentine, and suggests Unisia and Unisian as more appropriate. It is remarkable how anxious all cockneys are to look after the language and the welfare of America, while the men of other nations are attending to their own business.

AMERICA! What other word sounds sweeter to the men of all nations or does more to cheer the lovers of humanity? From what source came its sweetness and its cheer? Not from England,

Canada, Mexico, Brazil or Argentine, nor from the older nations of Europe, but from the self-evident truths given to the world in the Declaration of Independence, by the inspired apostles of liberty, who boldly faced British persecution, poverty and death, to lift fallen man to the civic station for which God designed him, and placed a new light and chart in his hands to guide him and the world, away from the dark caverns of political night, in which they had been lost for ages.

When Americans contemplate the amazing results of the labor of their fathers, their scepticism must vanish as to the Spiritual God of Creation, inspiring both the discovery of America and the founding of its great Republic, which is now beyond the power of Britain, aided by the King of Darkness and his evil spirits; with Carnegie's money and the gold of the world aiding them, to tear out the self-evident truths that lie in the corner stone of the government founded by Washington and the patriots of 1776—God's Temple of Justice. To guard this sacred Temple the Almighty has inspired the best, the bravest and the purest of the Aryan families of Europe to unite in America where they have produced a new and more vigorous branch of the family than any from which they are descended. No single European nation can claim this new American Branch as exclusively from her own stock, especially the one which has been so cruel in her enmity and treacherous in her friendships. Neither can the affinity of a common language, bind Americans to any foreign nation, because the American is a blend of all the European languages.

A hundred millions of intelligent, liberty-loving people, rich and powerful, dominating a mighty continent, cannot afford to have their best achievements go to the credit of a mere handful of unfriendly and ever intermeddling cockneys on a distant island. Self-protection demands that all our school children be Americanized; that their love of country be strengthened by reciting the glorious deeds of their fathers in resisting British tyranny, instead of bewildering and deluding them by placing a false gloss over the civic crimes of those who were and are again seeking to be the oppressors of their country. The sons of Ireland, Scotland, Wales, Holland, Germany, Sweden, France, Hungary and Switzerland successfully fought England in the American war for independence, and gave freedom to our continent. The descendants of those gallant men with the tens of millions who have joined them since 1783, owe nothing to England but the greatest care against her over-reaching avarice, deceits and disturbing methods.

There is not a book by an English author, that was publisht a hundred years ago, which was not dedicated to "My Lady This" or "My Lord That," and prepared under the roof of the lord or lady, to whom it was dedicated by a literary sycophant; therefore, such books are unfit mental nourishment for American families or schools. That which has been eulogized in the literature of a country, passes into the minds of the children and is cherisht as the deeds and sayings of their fathers to shape their lives for good or evil. We assign greater respect to the deeds of the dead, than we do to the acts of

the living; therefore, the books which go into our schools should treat of the great Washington and our early patriots, rather than of George the Third, and his despotic ministers; or of Henry the Eighth and his beheaded wives, or even of the late Victoria—Queen and Empress of twenty-eight aggressive wars on weak and defenseless people. Civilization is a slow growth. The mental seeds we plant today, will leave in human affairs their impress for good or evil for a thousand years after we are gone. The moral inheritance of William of Normandy still polutes social life in the palaces and huts of England, and his roving, free-booting despotism dominated Victoria, while sending her fleets and armies out over the waters of the world, as pirates in quest of territorial plunder. The influence of the brutal gladiatorial scenes that amused the citizens of Rome, still lingers in the bull-fights of Spain and Mexico.

Philosophic observers cannot help but notice the difference, not only in nature and the conduct of men born and educated under the free institutions of America and those who come here matured from the King-ridden nations of Europe, with down-cast eyes and the hesitating demeanor of inferiority impressed on their progenitors by the degrading system of casts, but who soon take on the manly bearing of American freemen and bow to no superior but their God. Also the difference between even the animals bred and reared in America and those imported from England. In years past, imported thorobred horses generally required several men, with the aid of chains and long poles to take them

from their stables, each man armed with a heavy club to protect himself and comrades from being bitten or trampled to death by the ferocious animal. The viciousness of the beast was the natural outgrowth of the British system of breaking by brute force, with clubs and instruments of torture, instead of the American system of educating and training with kindness. There is no country in the world where domestic animals can be handled with more safety than in the United States; the docility of whose animals is an inheritance from sire to son, while the imported animal like "Millet's Man With The Hoe," represents the cruelties of ages, the stinging patrimony of chains and bludgeons, felt by sires and transmitted to sons. God is teaching America by the use of a kind, melodious language to lead the people of the world into the ways of wisdom, peace and gentleness in the treatment of both men and animals.

Wherever crime or pauperism is found in America it may be traced back to some crushed family in Europe, whose descendants came to us with so low an inheritance, mentally and physically, that it will require many generations of American environment to lift them from the fallen state of their progenitors, to the level of American civilization, where men with the pride of manhood look each other in the face as equals. The wretch Czolgoz, was not the product of American civilization, but that of Europe, where unequal laws, social customs and military rule, degrade and brutalize the masses.

That a change for the better takes place under American laws, cannot be questioned. The Euro-

peans who come to us, soon drop the timid looks and actions generated by ages of unequal laws and social customs, and take on the cheerful countenance, the firm step and the independent poise of Americans.

The method of lifting the fallen humanity of Europe to the American plane, is shown by a report of E. C. Cooly, when Superintendent of Schools in Chicago, who said: "To do in years, what England did in centuries, is the task of America; to do it, would be impossible if it were not for our institutions of modern civilization—one of which we of America are fond to believe reaches its highest results in America—the public school. This task, which America is attempting, part of which is being undertaken by the Chicago schools as they re-open, is that of fusing a dozen nationalities into one.

It is to be doubted if the schools are accomplishing any greater result for the nation at this time, than the making of a dozen dissimilar elements into one harmonious whole. It is in a smelting furnace that the public school is making the nation. Probably in no other city in the country is this operation of the public school seen to better advantage than in Chicago. Aside from New York there is no city in which all elements are present in such strength. It is doubtful if even in New York, there are such large proportions of all.

If one will go into the first grade of a Bohemian school, that is one in which the children of Bohemian parentage reach as high as 80 or 90 per cent of the enrollment, he will find Bohemians. The ideas of these children, their language, their customs,

are Bohemian. Some of them speak nothing but Bohemian. Now if the observer will go into the eighth grade of the same school, he will see what it has done towards making this nation composite and unified.

These eighth grade children are not one whit different from the children of American parentage. Great as is the difference between them and the children of the first grade, the distinction between them and their parents is still greater. It is an indication of the force which has been at work in the building of the nation. One of the teachers in such a school permitted the girls of her class to invite a number of boys to a social event in the school house. By the time the children had reached her grade, which was the eighth, the economic which thins the ranks of the boys, had been at work, so that her class was composed almost entirely of girls. The boys came. They were the pupils who had dropped out of school three or four grades further down to go to work. The teacher was astonished at the difference between the boys who had not been thru the grades and the girls who had. She was inclined to lament that the boys should have been deprived of the nationalizing influence of the schools.

It was readily apparent, however, that the boys were not outside the influence. The girls carried it with them. They carried it into their homes, and the result might be seen on their parents. I have been in the schools in which the first grade pupils were singing Bohemian songs for the reason that they could not sing any other. The upper grades

of that same school were full of typical American children. The Chicago schools have recognized that this was one of their particular functions—one of the clearly defined duties of the city, and the nation. The needs of the work have developed teachers with special ability in the lines required. Teachers have appeared who have the special gift of working with nationalities, of kneading, as it were, the different parts into one."

In 1900 we said in U. and R. America: In order that our Republic may have a language harmonizing with its free institutions and form a channel along the shores of time thru which the blessings of liberty may flow unpolluted to our posterity, the word "American" in lieu of the word "English" should be used by the sons and daughters of the Republic to designate our language. It should also be used in all the text-books and dictionaries of our public schools. Greek and Latin form the base of the languages of Europe and America—even the mother language of England—yet the language used by each nation in Europe takes the name of the people using it. It is French in France; Spanish in Spain; Italian in Italy; German in Germany; English in England, etc., etc., then why not be American in America? It is the essential thing required to round out and complete the Declaration of Independence. When nations conquer nations the superiors generally force their own language on those whom they subjugate, the better to hold them as inferiors. Are the one hundred millions of America content to be considered inferiors by England gathering as they do new words and ideas from the men of all languages

coming to them for homes from the four corners of the earth, and assimilating the men, words and ideas with our free institutions? Shall they continue to credit their beneficent work to a small and distant people of doubtful friendship?

Language has been, is now and will continue to be a constant growth. It fits itself to environment; to the institutions of a country. The language and sentiments of Monarchical polity seldom harmonize with those of Democracy. Monarchy, empire and kingdom usually stimulate and convey ideas that are unfriendly to republican policy. The best, the safest, the least expensive and the most permanent fortification that can be erected for the defense of the American Republic is the literature that circulates thru the homes of its citizens and the schools where the youths of the land are educated. Color this literature with sentiments friendly to free institutions, to political equity, to free education, to public and private morality, to the industry and tranquility of the nation. Stimulate the confidence of the people in their power for good; in submitting to law and order and the will of the majority. Then America, free from the meretricious claims of a false paternity, doing impartial justice to all nations and holding none as favorites or pets, may defy the enmity of the world.

The true American can have but little pride in the fact that his government is sending to the Philippines and to Porto Rico a thousand school teachers to teach the people English instead of American? We gained 30,000,000 since writing the above and

we still degrade The Republic with the word "English."

Even in England our language is recognized as American. A London correspondent of the Chicago Tribune has recently reported that: "A writer in the October (1900) number of the Pall Magazine discourses upon what he is pleased to call the 'American language,' going to some length to explain wherein it differs from the English proper. According to the views of this writer, the 'American language' is rightly so called, not because of its provincialism and slang, but for its strength and vitality. New and changing conditions of life call for a new dialect to express them, and many words which were at first derided as 'Americanism' are now an added strength to the English language. Let the purists who sneer at 'Americanism' think for one moment how much poorer the English language would be today if North America had become a French or Spanish instead of an English continent."

A 1915 press dispatch says: As war emphasizes the national spirit of belligerents, so in a country such as the United States, seeking individual and complete national consciousness, a desire manifests itself to give greater potency to the word "American" and its content, says the Financial American. In this spirit comes a suggestion from a publisher in Philadelphia, Jacob Backes, that for the purpose of expanding American trade and enhancing American prestige abroad, all spoken and printed designation of the language of the people of United States should take the form of the "American language."

As a matter of fact, it should be noted that of the 160,000,000 people speaking the English language thruout the world, two-thirds are now in the new world.

Charles E. Russell the brilliant American author recently criticising the faulty tonal expression of the English said: "We pronounce differently. We have different constructive methods; we are beginning to have decidedly different ideas about grammar; except in the books of certain publishers, we spell differently, and most clearly and unmistakably, we are developing a totally different dictum. Listen attentively to the ordinary conversation of typical American business men in any city, away from the seaboard; compare it the next time you have a chance with similar conversations among a like gathering of English business men. You will find that the two groups have been speaking different tongues. The talk of the Americans has been full of words, terms, phrases, locution that you never heard anywhere else. Much of it would be utterably unintelligible to Englishmen. Slangy, no doubt; unpolisht, very likely; ready, unconventional and possibly a trifle coarse; full of strange words not to be found in the dictionary; but immensely picturesque, strong, virile, nervous, and exactly suited to the country and the conditions of which it is a product.

The Americans have not been talking English. No, they have been talking American; a language vastly better fitted to their use. * * * Since language is made from the bottom up, and is formed of the speech of the masses, we can be quite sure

that day after day, the foundations are being laid for the future American tongue, that considering the many sources of its supply and the insistent pressure upon it for condensed and vigorous expression, will probably be the strongest and richest language in the world."

"From the German and Latin elements, among us, we are constantly drawing expressions that, slang at first, eventually work their way up into recognized and admitted diction, and yet are unknown in England. That fact alone, indicates that we have passed out of the normal stage of imitation and are to find our way and have our own standards. It also indicates that we are to have a speech of unexampled freshness and resources. * * *

"We have now a nation of a hundred million people, rapidly increasing; in wealth and in average intelligence, the foremost people in the world. This vast population is drawn from all the races of Europe. The original so-called Anglo-Saxon influence has long been submerged by immigration, climate and conditions. That so great a nation, so formed, should be without a language of its own, or should reverently take its linguistic standards from the language spoken and written in England, is nothing against us. Of course it is different; it is made and used by a very different people. There is no more reason why we should regard the usage of England as constituting a model for us, than there is for us to try to speak as the ancient Britons. We are not English. We have a nationality of our own. It is high time that we had also a recognized language and standards of our own, and if the

learned will kindly cease trying to keep the intellectual swaddling clothes on us, we will shortly have both. And when we have an American language, we shall have an American literature. So long as we walk at the cart-tail of another people's language, we shall imitate another peoples' literature.* * *

"There is nobody on earth who can teach us to be the political, commercial or industrial vassals of any other nation; in affairs of government we will not take advice from anybody. We have well begun to paint for ourselves, engineer for ourselves, make our own music, write our own plays, produce our own novels. Why then, should we continue to teach our children that the only style for our literature, is one copied from a community on the other side of the world, or think that by some miracle, gross-imitation can produce originality. On calm reflection, does anything else seem more preposterous? * * *

"Compare the newspapers of the two countries, which is, after all the best comparison, since the newspapers must always be the accurate reflector of life and manners. It will need but a glance to show that the newspapers of America and the newspapers of England, already use different languages. The styles are even further apart than the spelling and diction. Those long, turgid and inert sentences that wind their slow length along in the news columns of a London Journal—can you conceive of such things in the New York Sun or the Chicago Tribune? * * *

"'Newspaper English' was long an undeserved

reproach among us. Newspaper English, is doubtless, bad enough, but 'Newspaper American' is a might vehicle. It is unusually terse, strong, apt, adequate and expressive of the idea it seeks to convey. There is no better test of a language. What is wanted as a means of human communication, is not speech conformable to the standard of dead men or the dying, but speech competent to transfer the ideas of the living. It makes not a particle of difference whether the style of writing in American newspapers follows the model of Adison or is such as would be approved by the dreary sons of Oxford. * * *

"The only question worth considering, is whether it adequately imbues the mind of the writer. To do this it must be put into speech that the reader knows, and as most American readers know only American speech, American newspapers are perfectly justified in using that language only. No doubt, the language written and spoken in England is good for the people who live there; but it would be very bad for us. There is no reason why we should bother with it except as a curiosity.

"Isn't it about time to be done with imitation? If 'railroad' is the American word, why import somebody's else 'railway'? If the American practice is to pronounce it 'skedule,' why try to learn to say 'shedule?' If most of our countrymen are committed to 'eether,' lets have 'eether' for the standard and forget to say 'eyether.' Store, meaning a place where commodities are for sale, is better for our use than 'shop,' for it has a distinction in signification that the English do not know. 'For Rent'

is American: 'To Be Let,' is English. The American form is shorter and more accurate. Do you suppose you could ever induce a Western farmer to refer to his wheat as 'corn;' or to his corn as 'maize?' Then, if in this respect, his practice is right for him, why are not all his other Americanisms right? Can anybody say? Do you think the learned authorities of England can make an American brakeman talk about 'shunting' or 'throwing the points?'

"Why should we wish to change ticket office to 'booking office;' baggage to 'luggage;' farmer to 'peasant;' or abandon any other national form of speech? If it is American to differentiate between co-ordinating and restrictive pronouns, let's observe this distinction. We say half-past five; the English say 'half-after.' Let us stick to half-past. Car is good enough for us; we need not learn to say 'tram' simply because that is the barbarous English usage. You might as justly call a railroad car a rail, or a baggage car a 'bag.' As ninety-nine of every one hundred Americans invariably retain in their speech the old pronunciation of the letter 'A,' why risk our necks trying to make it into 'Ah?' You can no more make the people of the interior say 'bahth,' than you can make wings sprout on them. Then why not give it up and make 'bath' the recognized American standard and turn the other out upon the wastelands of bad form?

"Once we were well on the road toward a distinctively American orthography for our American language, an orthography suited to our needs, customs and national peculiarities. Being a busy people

and prest for time, we had dropt from our spellings, many redundant, senseless and useless letters still rigidly adhered to in the slow English practice. We had learned to omit the needless 'u' from labor, favor, honor, parlor, savor, mold and many such words; to discard a superfluous 'l' from traveler' and a useless 'g' from wagon, and to shorten in other ways a heavy and lumbering speech, thus saving valuable minutes and easing the burden of life. We had made that beginning and there was every likelihood that the progress of common sense would triumph over the other orthographical lunacies we still recognize. And now the American book publishers have combined to bring our language back to the old and moldy moorings. Scarcely an American book now appears in which the British spellings are not re-introduced. The American book publishers have thrown away the native orthography and slavishly taken their standards from Oxford. Labor with them, has once more become 'labour;' favor is 'favour;' the good old American colors have been hauled down to the English 'colours.' Why? I hesitate to tell the reason. It sounds so foolish, but after the adoption of the international copyright, English publishers refused to handle books in which 'labor' appeared without the 'u,' and to oblige these liberal and broadminded gentlemen, the national orthography is being remade.

President Roosevelt's idea of simplified spelling would have done much to help the national language. for there is no chance that the English would have adopted it, and once started upon that road, we

should soon straighten our orthographical tangles. With great eclat we defeated what was really a wise and patriotic project, yet in time, we shall come to exactly this proposition. The newspapers, that every day teach millions, are far more efficient instructors than the books few read and none remember, and with total disregard of reverend and obsolete authorities, the newspapers are moving steadily toward a national spelling and a distinctive diction."

The best way to be rid of those Anglicizing book publishers is for the American States to publish their own school books. This would also shut out the revised school histories proposed in Earl Grey's program to bring America back under the British flag.

The American language, like the American race, is but in its infancy, and will continue to grow in beauty and power as long as the Republic remains true to the principles on which it was founded. Our language is a sprightly, harmonious blend of the best words in the literatures of the world. It will be the language in which the future historians, orators and poets, editors and moralists of the world, will give voice to the humanity, truth and simplicity of an American civilization; free from the harsh, self-debasing words and ideas befitting only the serfs and menials of Britain.

It is the duty of all citizens who love America, its free institutions, language and people, in speaking of them, to use the comprehensive, derivative word "American." The whole world understands and uses it now. If we visit London, Paris, Berlin,

Vienna, St. Petersburg, Tokio, or Pekin, we are not received by their peoples or governments as Canadians, or Mexicans, but as Americans. Our ambassadors and other officers are recognized by the courts of Europe as Americans. Our flag, our navy, our army, are known in all parts of the world as American.

There needs be no change in either our pronunciation, orthography, etymology, syntax or prosody. All that is necessary is to place the keystone word "American" in the arch of our literature. By the application of this broad and simple derivative we remove from British hands the principal and most effective weapon now used in deluding our people and destroying our Republic. It will also place Americans in more friendly relations with their kindred in other nations, and relieve our Republic from the charge of being an obsequious mental satellite of Britain, and allow it to be what God and the patriot fathers destined it to be—a principal planet—the dominating world power, beneficently controlling the motions of all nations in promoting virtue, truth and peace; in the ways of industry, justice and humanity until the whole earth shall be redeemed from the Prince of Darkness, and become what the Supreme Invisible God of Creation desires it to be—A Delightful Eden.

Past, Present and Approaching Dangers to the
Republic, and the Motives of Those Who
Have and Are Causing Them.

CHAPTER XVII.

PARTING OF THE WAYS.

In colonial times a slave company operated by Queen Elizabeth and Sir John Hawkins, her chief pirate, forct African slaves on America. During the war of 1812 England found many ardent friends among the Puritan descendants of New England. To unite those friends with the British disciples of Wilberforce in a crusade against the slave system of our Southern States was a capital idea to divide and conquer our young republic. After a bitter crusade of forty-six years our civil war was produced, then England swiftly changed to the side of slavery, but the God of Creation remained with the Goddess of America, saved the Republic of Washington and erased the British stain of slavery from the entire American Continent with the blood of a million white men and the expenditure of five billions of dollars.

In October 1860 the author witnest, in St. Louis, Mo., a great throng of people wildly cheering the Prince of Wales, later Edward VII, then touring America after delivering to President Buchanan at Washington a message from Victoria, his Queen mother, expressing the sincerity of her own

friendship and that of all her subjects for their kindred race in the American Union.

While the echoes of those cheers were still sounding over the City of St. Louis the author learned, from the public press, that Lord Lyons the British Minister at Washington, who with his suite accompanied the Prince, had sent Sir Edmund Munson one of his agents to fan the fires of secession in the South where he remained to rejoice with Slidell over the fall of Fort Sumpter.

In November 1860 Mr. Lincoln was elected President. Twelve days before his inauguration Queen Victoria notified President Buchanan that she felt no hesitation as to the policy she would pursue if the plans of Mr. Lincoln to save the Union should raise questions with Great Britain. First she would be very forbearing and show how highly she valued her relations of peace and amity with the United States, but she would take care to show that her forbearance sprang from the consciousness of her strength and not from the timidity of her weakness. She then recognized the belligerency of the Confederate States, the day before Mr. Adams, Lincoln's American Minister, reached London, and maintained her enmity for the Republic to the end of the war.

Victoria was so sure of the fall of our Republic she induced the Little Napoleon to establish a Franco-Austrian monarchy in Mexico, to be on hand to take the Territory of Louisiana, purchast from his uncle in 1803 by Jefferson, as his share of the American snake, after it was cut in two and then

into smaller pieces with the assistance of England and France, as both expected.

But the God of Creation inspired the sons of the patriots of 1776 to disappoint the enemies of the Republic by ceasing strife and uniting in a closer and more enduring union at Appomattox, where General Grant told the men of the South to keep their swords and horses and go to their homes in peace and join with the men of the North in repairing the waste places of the Republic; and, as a common heritage, strengthen the foundations of the house commenct by their patriotic forefathers at Lexington and Concord and defend it against all **enemies.**

General Grant then sent an army of observation, under General Sheridan, to the borders of Mexico—a notice to Napoleon to move out with his monarchy, which he wisely obeyed. Grant next served notice on Victoria to pay damages to the Republic for injury done by her pirate-ship during the war or move entirely off the American Continent. She paid \$15,500,000 and promist to be good, but her promise was worthless.

In 1866 she organized the Colden Club to destroy American industry, being defeated in that, she organized in 1898 the Anglo-American League to unite the Pilgrim Clubs of New York and Boston with the British Parliament to destroy the Republic by merging it into an English Speaking Empire.

To aid in combating the evils of both the club and the league the author in 1900 organized and incorporated under the laws of Illinois the

Emergonians (see Appendix 1) and publisht Urban and Rural America to defend their principles.

To revive the American spirit of 1776 he publisht in the December 1901 issue of the magazine the following:

American Patriots.

If the proper study of mankind is man; then, for the Youths of America, as an inspiration and a spur to their patriotism, the most appropriate branch of that study is the one which will most truly reveal to them, and impress on their minds the illustrious achievements of the early patriots, the progenitors of the American Race and the founders of the free institutions of our great Republic, of which themselves must necessarily soon become active citizens; a study which will admit them behind the scenes where their forefathers bravely acted the most inspiring parts in the grandest political drama in the history of the world; where they may contemplate the sublime movements that warmed the hearts of freemen, encouraged their hopes and strengthened their high resolves in the cause of civil liberty.

U. R. America deems this branch of study now highly necessary, because an attempt is being made by English writers, thru the metropolitan press of America and so-called historical novels, to recast those inspiring parts and to repaint with a sickly hue those patriotic scenes, which for more than one hundred and twenty-five years have been shedding so much merited glory on the founders of our Republic, and justly exposing to the contempt of man,

the inhumanity and imbecility of despotism when opposed by a united people.

Commencing in January, 1902, with George Washington, who was in the fore front of every patriotic movement in behalf of his country, we shall continue from month to month a brief sketch of the lives and services of the men who acted honorable parts in the political drama of America during the struggle for independence, and in the crowning act of that struggle, the adoption of the Constitution, the Charter of our liberties.

The lives of George Washington, Thomas Jefferson, John Adams, James Otis, Patrick Henry, Joseph Warren, Samuel Adams, John Hancock, James Wilson, John Rutledge, David Ramsey, Roger Sherman, Robert Livingston, Richard Henry Lee and Benjamin Rush; also Washington's farewell address were publisht. Then, because of growing age and a diminishing purse, the magazine was discontinued, but not his anxiety about threatened dangers to the Republic as will be seen in Appendix 2 at end of the volume. The seeds scattered by the magazine rest in rich soil and will bear patriotic fruit to be garned by men representing the authors of the following commendations:

Bedford, Ill., Aug. 16, 1902.

Publisher of U. and R. America,
Quincy, Ill.:

Dear Sir: Father takes your paper and on Sundays reads aloud to mother, while we listen. We live on a farm and help father do the work. I am fifteen and my brother Dave is twelve. Last Sunday when father finisht reading about Samuel

Adams he asked me if I would like to be a good man like Mr. Adams. I said I would, and I will try to be just as good. My mother kist me and said she was proud of her son. She did the same thing today and told me to write to you and tell you that my promise to be good and brave like Mr. Adams makes her happy. I will read about Mr. Adams often.

MADISON YOUNG.

I have been reading *Urban and Rural America* from its first number, and to say to you that I am pleased with your patriotic work would not be doing it full justice. I am delighted and have been greatly instructed in the history of the Republic by your brief biografies of the great and mighty men who establisht our free institutions. Every citizen who has a family should and ought to have *Urban and Rural America* on his table, if he wishes his children to be lovers of his country. I thank you not only for the pleasure I find in its pages, but also for the general good you are doing, and I congratulate you on the universal approval of your patriotic work, which I hear from citizens who come to this office.

BEN HECKLE, County Recorder.

I wish to express to you my sincere appreciation of the stand taken by your paper for America and American institutions, and of the forceful and gentlemanly way in which your arguments are stated.

J. R. PEARCE, County Clerk.

I have been a constant reader of your paper, *Urban and Rural America*, since its first issue. I am much pleased with it, and more imprest with

the themes, tone and conscience pervading its subjects. You are certainly dealing in topics representing vital needs of the nation, state and society in what seems to me the most trying ordeals of governmental experience in the United States. Every patriotic man ought to prize and read your valuable paper.

Yours truly,

JAMES N. SPRIGG, County Attorney.

Having read with pleasure and much interest *Urban and Rural America* since its first issue, I desired to say that I am much pleased with its contents, and the clean pure articles, and especially with its true patriotic sentiment. It should be placed in the hands of all young people.

EDWARD SHANNON.

I am well pleased with your publication, *Urban and Rural America*, and I find much interesting reading in it. Such a paper should be in every house in the United States. H. M. SWOPE.

I hope you will continue your *Urban and Rural America* along the lines you have so ably conducted it during the past year. The moral and patriotic tone of the paper is of such a high order that it is a most desirable paper to have in any private family.

F. M. McCANN.

The author looks with confidence to the sons of the brave man who wore the gray as well as to those who wore the blue to maintain the Republic. They marched to victory in the late Spanish war as their fathers marched at Lexington and Concord.

The empress of the wild scene at St. Louis in

1860 and the events that followed, went with the author into the war and still remains with him and inspired the writing of the letter that received the following commendation from the editor of the Quincy Journal:

The Journal prints today a very able and most readable and instructive letter from Capt. Piggott—a letter which will make good reading for republicans and democrats alike. Capt. Piggott, since the war, in which he fought and lost a leg, has been a staunch and thorogoining republican—But he has been much more than a republican; he has been a patriot—and if anything is offensive to the leaders of the present administration, it is patriotism. Not sham patriotism, for that is their long suit,—but real, genuine patriotism. The sort of patriotism, for example, that loyally upholds the Declaration of Independence. This sort of patriotism McKinley and the leaders he has called about him despise as they despise honorable, straightforward dealing with the people.

Capt. Piggott was the republican postmaster here in Quincy for sixteen years, and after he quit the postoffice he was connected with the government Indian service some five or six years, as we remember it. He was appointed by Harrison and served on into Cleveland's term.

Capt. Piggott's republicanism, as well as his patriotism, is something no man has ever been able to call in question.

Read what he says in today's Journal. What he presents is ably and eloquently said, and it makes both interesting and instructive reading."

The letter reads as follows:

“When Washington and the patriots of 1776 rebelled against British oppression they gave to political liberty and man’s right to self-government a life and a meaning which they never had before. In their declaration of independence they tore into shreds and spurned the world’s cloak for despotism—the divine rights of kings—and gave in lieu thereof the immortal assertion that man had inalienable rights to his life, his liberty, and his property—an assertion that sent from the forests of America an expanding and a warming glow throu the hearts of opprest humanity in every nation of the world. It was a glow that bade tyrants beware, and finally sent the oldest and proudest of them tumbling headless from his throne into the blood of his privileged associates, maintainers and advisers. May we not truly say that this execution was the merited vengeance of a just God by the hands of a starved and outraged people?

It matters not what may be the rewards or punishments of a future existence, no man ever existed that did not during his life suffer for his crimes. Much more is it so with nations. Therefore, it is not safe nor in the end is it profitable for man or a nation to play the part of bully with his or its fellows, because they are certain to bite the ground at the feet of some avenger.

The whole world stands dumfounded at seeing British lords, dukes, earls and squires, with their trained hosts, gathered from the four corners of the earth, biting the ground at the feet of a few Dutch farmers in Africa, who are fighting for re-

publican freedom; for their families, their country and their God.

The monarchs of Europe, to whom republican principles are obnoxious, while hating the British aggressor, carefully stand out of her way while she strangles those young republics, expecting at the end to take a share of their country.

That the German emperor favors the cause of his greedy grandmother should not surprise us much, but to find the president of our great American Republic playing the part of best man and friend to faithless England in such a struggle, should bring the blush of shame to the cheeks of all true Americans, who know and remember the past.

Why are we placed by our public servants in such a disgraceful position? Is there a hidden cause for it? Do our statesmen in Washington fear to probe the problem? Do they doubt that God still reigns in the affairs of men?

The people will have answers to these questions in due time.

Within thirty days after Dewey destroyed the Spanish fleet in the bay of Manila and Schley destroyed the Spanish fleet near the bay of Santiago, our high and humane purpose, in the cause of freedom and the inalienable rights of man, were abandoned for one of low deception and criminal aggression in behalf of corporate greed. Our victorious arms in an honorable cause were turned against a brave and friendly people, who for hundreds of years had made a gallant fight against Spanish tyranny and corruption; a civilized Christian people whom we pre-

tended in the name of good government to serve in a struggle against a common enemy; a people who welcomed us as friends and allies to their country just as victory was dawning upon their efforts, with nearly one-half of the Spanish army in their hands as prisoners of war, and the other half coopt up virtually as prisoners in the walled town of Manila.

Our secret understanding with the Spanish commander at Manila for a mock battle to deceive the Filipinos before the final surrender, was a disgrace to those who planned the deception. It was the first step in a foul national crime not only against the Filipino, but against all that is sacred in our professions, our traditions, and our liberal institutions. It was truly the parting from the American ways of Washington and Lincoln to those of George III, Cecil Rhodes and Joseph Chamberlain, where "bad begins and worse remains behind" to undermine the peace, prosperity and freedom of our people.

The cause of this disgraceful change at the parting of the ways in Manila, has been carefully hidden by the President's guilty advisers from the public. But those who have been observant of past events as noted by the press of the country, must have noticed the rays of light that have been thrown at intervals on the subject from several directions, but sufficiently bright to expose the evil spirits shifting scenes behind the curtains at the White House in Washington.

I will, in my feeble way, attempt to focus from the columns of that good, imperial paper, the Chicago Tribune a few of those rays in order to re-

veal the cause which placed a foul blot on the Stars and Stripes, and in the esteem of the moral world lowered our flag from its former high position to a level with the Union Jack in wanton aggression upon the rights of others.

The Tribune gave us the strongest ray of light January 5th, 1900, in a letter from its Paris correspondent, which informed us that since 1896 there had existed in this country a society of money magnates, composed, among others; of Rockefeller, Vanderbilt and Havemeyer; and known as the American China Development Company, having as a trade mark a huge golden seal, with the Chinese and American flags crost upon it, and that this society of magnates, in April, 1898, thru Li Hung Chang, had accorded to them by the court of Pekin, large concessions in China.

A previous ray had reacht us in a London dispatch to the same paper February 6th, 1899, saying that William Prichard Morgan, M. P., had returned from China, where he and his British associates, acting in partnership with an American syndicate and the Chinese authorities had obtained control of all the mines and oil-fields in the province of Szechuan, the richest province in China, with a population equaling that of the United States, and where labor may be had at 12 cents per day; that the syndicate proposed to administer the concessions on lines followed by Cecil Rhodes in South Africa.

Mr. Morgan, explaining the concessions in the house of commons, said: "Yes, several American capitalists are interested with us in China. The

principal is Mr. Fergusson McIntosh, of Pittsburg, who has gone with the first expedition to peg-out mining claims. It is one of the biggest enterprises ever undertaken by any syndicate. I am precluded from saying more now because foreign susceptibilities must not be excited, but I expect American capitalists will profit largely by Chinese development.

"The French minister entered a protest on the ground of monopoly and interference with treaty rights, but it was firmly opposed by the Chinese government. Everything is now complete.

Some months since, in the same paper, we had an American ray. Yes, several rays, in a report of W. Kirkpatrick Brice, son of the late senator, Calvin Brice, of Ohio. At the outbreak of the Spanish war, young Brice was at Hong Kong making arrangements for a survey of the Yueh-Han railway from Hankow to Canton, projected by the Brice syndicate formed by his father and for which extensive valuable concessions had been obtained from the Chinese government. Now mark:

Young Brice says that he cabled an offer of his services to Washington and at once was given a commission, and assigned to the staff of Gen. Anderson, who had been selected to lead the first expedition to the Philippines. He went to Cavite in June and was the first American soldier to reach there. He served in the operations against Manila and at the end of hostilities with Spain resigned and returned to China, where he completed his survey.

How strange that the President should send to

China for a green volunteer officer when the woods were full of them at home and jumping over one another into the service. Did Brice get his commission to serve the Anglo-British syndicate's interest in China by starting the aggressions against the Filipinos? It looks that way.

Now, mark again: In his report Brice gave the personnel of his surveying party as follows: Gen. Wm. Barkley Parsons, connected with the Rapid Transit commission of New York; E. C. Coulter, of the Chesapeake & Ohio railway; R. C. Hunt and H. B. Magor, civil engineers; Chas. Denby, Jr., son of Chas. Denby, of the Philippine Peace Commission and formerly United States minister to China; William S. K. Whetmore, son of Senator Whetmore, of Rhode Island, Dr. Jellison, a missionary doctor of Nanking; Capt. W. H. Rich, an American connected with the Chinese imperial railway department and himself. Two mandarins, with Captain Rich, represented the Chinese government.

The fact that Rich and the mandarins were with the party shows that Mr. Morgan was correct when he stated in the house of commons that an American syndicate and the officers of the Chinese government were interested in the Chinese concession with him.

From the London Times department of the same paper November 24th, 1899, we had a small ray in a dispatch from Shanghai, saying: "The British minister Claude McDonald left today for Pekin. During his short stay here he was engaged on negotiations in reference to the Hankow land question. Advices from Tien-tsin report that the American

syndicate's negotiations in regard to the Hankow-Canton railway have been successfully concluded."

The strongest ray of all comes to us from the White House at Washington in the composition of Philippine commission, selected by the Cabinet to slander the Filipinos and deceive our own people in the interests of the Anglo-American syndicate. The chairman, J. G. Schurman, born in Canada and educated in London, saturated with British principles and prejudices, could not fully sympathize with our American ideas of government and honestly extend their beneficent influences over a struggling people who desired to form a republic at the gates of Asia, where their influence and success might check the march of the British empire in both Asia and India.

Chas. Denby was United States minister to China at the time the Anglo-American syndicate got its great concessions in China. Evidently he and the British minister managed the negotiations thru Li Hung Chang. How much interest does he hold in the concessions? I do not know, but I do know that his son was a member of the Brice surveying party and I do know, and Hay, Reid and Hanna know, that Mr. Denby was not a proper man to be placed on that commission.

I have no information about the interest or environment of Prof. Worcester, but, granting that he is a patriotic, unselfish American, with Schurman and Denby on the commission, it was simply a packed jury against the honesty and honor of America and the liberty of the Philippine archipelago.

(Worcester has lately written two volumes opposing the independence of the Filipinos; he shows that he was interested in the islands before he was placed on the commission).

It was the duty of Admiral Dewey to obey and not question the orders of the president, his commander-in-chief, but when the commission's report was prepared he carefully guarded his own honor by incorporating a memorandum showing his relation with Aguinaldo. Evidently the Admiral is pleased to be out of the fight and must be gratified that no gun under his command was turned against the Filipinos.

Senator Brice knew when he organized the Anglo-American syndicate that the stake to be played for was an immense one. In the language of Morgan it was "The biggest enterpirse ever undertaken by any syndicate." How many senators did he take into the syndicate? I do not know; that is to be developept. But that a number of them are there we have little doubt. Are they in sufficient numbers under the syndicate's cloak to suppress an honest, open investigation of the matter? Judging from the action of the Senate on the resolution of Mason, Hoar and Pettigrew, I fear they are. We have reason to believe that the Paris peace commission was constituted and packt like that of the Philippines, for the same purpose; to advance the Anglo-American syndicate's interest in China.

No doubt we will hear a shout all along the line from the imperialists, "Well, suppose it was. Is not that advancing American interests?"

No, it only advances the interest of a few Anglo-American millionaires and enables them to become billionaires at the expense of the labor, both skilled and unskilled, of this country.

Remember the province in which these concessions lie has a population equaling that of the United States, and that labor may be had there for 12 cents per day. Is there any American farmer, laborer or mechanic, so foolish and short-sighted as not to see that the mineral wealth of that province, handled by 12 cents a day labor—under agents of the syndicate—will soon be brought into competition with the \$2 a day labor of our own market? If there is one, I pity him. I find the men mentioned in the syndicate are among those now controlling our railway lines, which are being organized into an immense syndicate. When ready for business and acting with Hanna's ship combine under the open-door policy, dictated by Salisbury, the people of America will be at their mercy. Then good-bye to liberty and may God pity our laboring people.

Now, now, now or never, is the time to strangle this forming giant of destruction.

The President, with long and serious visage—eyes moist and rolling heavenward, his left hand prest over his heart, and his right extended toward our beautiful flag, with quivering voice, amid the wild applause of the thoughtless multitude, and the placid smiles of the beneficiaries of the allied greed of two continents, may exclaim, "Who will dishonor our country by hauling down that flag where destiny has placed it over soil stained with the blood of our soldiers?" But such mockery will not erase

the foul stains placed on that flag by his administration nor hide from history the fact that he was the first of our presidents to degrade and stain it in an unjust cause.

In reply to his mockery, I, whose blood has been shed in defense of that flag and the integrity of the republic which it represents, would gladly haul it down, yea, and if necessary would again cheerfully shed my blood to save it from further disgrace by the hungry political wolves who form his kitchen cabinet, and who sent young Brice to the Philippines to blaze the way for criminal aggression on that archipelago.

I would take the flag down from companionship with the Union Jack over the hospital ship *Maine* on its way to Africa to strangle struggling liberty on that continent. I would keep it out of China and away from all places where British greed would cunningly place it as an ally in political crime.

Every American had reason to be proud of the action of his country in the war with Spain, which promised freedom to oppressed Cuba and united the discordant sections of our own republic. Then it was that the government of the people, by the people, for the people, flashed out the light of its greatest glory, and overtopped the summits of all other nations as a beneficent world power in the cause of freedom, justice and humanity. Then, also, it was that the British serpent of bad faith, discord and greed, always coiled in wait to block the highway of our peace and prosperity, reached the ear of our weak and vain president, intoxicated his brain with fulsome praise, led him down, down, down to the

parting of the ways between American truth, justice and honor, and British deception, greed and dishonor, where it unrolled and promised a new world power to him if he would only turn away from the Monroe doctrine and be brave enough in the Philippines to grab, to hold, and to kill as Britain grabs, holds and kills in her civilizing march thru India, Asia, Africa and the islands of the seas. And then it was when Freedom fell.

Oh, shame, shame, eternal shame, may it rest for ever on the brow and memory of Wm. McKinley and his guilty advisers. May each drop of the brave American blood that has been so cruelly shed in the cause of corporate greed rise from the Philippine ground and come on the winds of day and night as avenging spirits into every section of our country till the national conscience is aroused and these guilty murderers are hurled from power as traitors to freedom, justice and humanity."—M. Piggott.

The executive servants of the American Republic, under what has been termed "a gentleman's agreement, stronger than a written treaty" with the Prince of Wales, Joseph Chamberlain, and Cecil Rhodes, boldly and defiantly violated the American Constitution, discarded the principles of Washington, Jefferson and Adams and accepted those of George the Third. Asserting that it was the duty of America to support England in "carrying the whiteman's burden and in giving good government to distant peoples" even against their will. And thus become a great world power, wholly ignoring the fact that the beneficent example of America for a 122 years before their criminal action had

done more to lighten, not only the whiteman's burden but that of all colors, creeds and nations than had any other government, ancient or modern, in its whole existence. The evil effects of that criminal change shockt the spirit of liberty and strengthened the hands of despotism in all parts of the world; pusht America from her proud position as a leader on the highway of civilization, to mark time in political quagmirers, as a cravin instead of a champion of liberty—English-led and English ruled; yea, even English driven, as seen in the Panama canal tolls, and the late British orders in council.

Under the terms of the "gentlemen's agreement," America strangled liberty in the Philippines and cheered Victoria while her savage hords trampled on it in Africa, undermined the Monroe Doctrine and invited despotism to the American continent and spread distrust of herself among neighboring republics.

To show how England carries the whiteman's burden and gives other peoples good government, we quote Charles E. Russell in the *New York Times*, (1909), who says: Great Britain has been in practical or absolute control of Indian affairs for a century and a half, and that the following results are apparent:

The percentage of illiteracy among the Indian people is very large. The country has repeatedly been swept by terrible famines, all of them preventable. It has been visited by epidemics, such as the bubonic plague, preventable and always controlled and suppress by efficient government. It is poor and steadily growing poorer. With unusual advan-

tages for the development of manufacturing, the manufacturing interests have languisht and vast hordes of the people suffer from unemployment. While the whole trend of modern evolution in government has been toward more democracy, the Government of India remains an absolute despotism. The system of taxation is oppressive and unjust, and in some particulars, as, for example, the salt tax, is merely barbarous.

There is taken from the country every year a very great sum for the support of the military establishment and for payment of pensions, and little of the money ever finds its way back. Thus year by year the country is impoverisht. While the great interest of India is agricultural, the methods employed in agriculture remain crude, primitive and inefficient. Obviously, and even admittedly, the chief purpose in the governing of India has been to exploit it for the benefit of the home country. India has made Great Britain rich. Great Britain has made India poor. Caste, the curse of India and foe of democracy, has been maintained as a bulkward of British rule.

Against these facts, undeniable in the mind of every unprejudiced person who has ever visited India, are urged these points. That the Government of India has been beneficial because it has been British, and British Government is always beneficial. That without British rule the various States and tribes of India would war upon each other. That the problem of Indian Government has been very complex and difficult, and we should make wide

allowance for good intentions, and withhold comment upon the failures.

I know of nothing more extraordinary than that any American should be influenced on any such grounds to think or speak tolerantly of absolutism. Can there be in this world at this day any such thing as a tolerable despotism? And if America does not stand now and always for free government everywhere, will some one kindly tell me what she does stand for? The idea that we are to applaud absolutism because it is British seems somewhat refreshing. What have we to do with that? We are not called upon to admire an autocracy because it is Russian, or another because it is Afghan. There is no more reason why we should tolerate it because it is British. Autocracy is autocracy, by whatever name it be called, and wherever it may be it is loathsome, hateful, retorgressive and poisonous to the people who live under it.

How is it possible to maintain that British rule, essentially and for no other reason than its name, means benevolence, when we remember Ireland and the South African republics? As to the details of British rule in India. I beg attention to these considerations: Take famines as one illustration. Famines in India are caused by interruption or shortage of the water supply. The total annual rainfall, if it were conserved and distributed, would always be enough for the country's needs. The money expended upon the military establishment would have covered the famine district with irrigation ditches and made famine impossible. By what process of casuistry is it possible to contemplate

this fact, to consider that within thirty years the annual expenditure for the military establishment has risen from \$30,000,000 to \$100,000,000, and then to defend the policy of Great Britain in India?

The whole country is the abode of poverty and misery, ignorance and destitution. Nowhere else on this earth except in the east end of London, can you see an equal depth of degradation. To go thru the populous regions of any Indian city under British rule is to be made sick at heart that human beings should dwell in such conditions. After a century and a half of British rule the state of the masses of the Indian people is at least as dreadful as it was before British rule began. Then what is the use of splitting hairs about good intentions? The hell of India is paved with them, and has been since time immemorial. The worst tyrants of the ancient days might have urged the same plea with the same results. Of the total population of India, about three hundred million persons, I think it likely, from my observations there, that one-half have never once known what it was to have enough to eat. I was informed that probably forty per cent live in a state of practical starvation. Before I distrust the evidence of my own eyes as to British misrule in India, some one will have to explain to me how these facts are in any way compatible with the idea of Governmental benevolence or Governmental efficiency, either.

As to the difficulties of the Indian problem, they may be admitted at once. To maintain autocracy anywhere in the twentieth century is very difficult, but observation will fail to show that it is any more

difficult than it ought to be, nor that there is anywhere on earth any particular difficulty about governing people when you let them govern themselves. The only thing that produces hatred in this world is hatred. The only thing that produces revolt is oppression. The only things that produce strife, resentment, difficulties for men or nations, are injustice, greed and wrong. The spirit of government does not recognize any "difficulties" in Government, and finds none.

But sad as is the condition of India under the British there is one phase of this discussion that is not without its grim humor. While we are being assured of the excellence of the Indian Government, nobody seems to consider how it is maintained. Well, then, how is that done? At the point of the rifle. After a century and a half of this style of benevolence, the gratitude of the people is so great that they are hourly expected to rise and tear their benefactors to pieces. Is it conceivable that were the Government really good the people would be incessantly plotting revolution? Or that it would be necessary to suppress free speech among them? Or forbid the right of assembly, or watch them always with jealous care, lest they obtain any kind of weapons, or dwell among them in fear of assassination? Every careful observer who has studied in India the problem of India knows perfectly well that nothing keeps the native population from driving the British into the sea but the rigorous care with which arms are kept out of native hands. And unless certain signs are very deceptive, even that precaution is not likely very much longer to pre-

vent an uprising compared with which the revolution of 1857 was incidental, unless, of course, the British are willing to conform to human progress and grant to the people they have so long plundered some rudiments of self-government.

I traveled up from Ahmedabad to Jalpur with an open-minded Englishman whose years in India had not obsest him with race prejudice and fatuous confidence. As we went thru villages and saw everywhere the scowling and sinister faces turned upon us, the meagre forms and wretcht huts, the children that do not play and the women who do not smile, and heard everywhere the same mutterings and curses, I said to my companion: "When is this volcano going to burst forth?" He gript me by the arm and looked me soberly in the eye, and said: "Any moment." Can there be wide-spread discontent under a good, benevolent, just and ideal Government? Will vast masses of people risk their lives to cast from them their own good? Do revolutions ever go backward? And above everything, I ask again, Can there be anywhere on this earth such a thing as a tolerable autocracy?"

Diodorus tells us that: "India abounded with plenty of all things necessary for the sustainance of man's life, that it supplied the inhabitants continually with such things as made them excessively rich, insomuch as it was never known that there was ever any famine amongst them." Yet, under British rule, more than 50,000,000 of its people have died from famine.

We must shake off those British delusions. The time to correct political evils is when they first

make their appearance. The Romans perceived the first steps taken by Ceasar to destroy their great republic, but before guarding against them waited until the enemy had become so strong it was impossible to check his designs. Cicero, the great orator, who first detected the pernicious intentions of Ceasar, said: "I perceive an inclination for tyranny in all that he projects and executes, but on the other hand when I see him adjusting his hair with so much exactness and scratching his head with one finger, I can hardly believe that such a man can conceive so vast and fatal a design as the destruction of the Roman commonwealth."

Neither could patriotic Americans believe in 1898 that John Hay and his partner Whitlow Reid, who both had carefully adjusted their hair and trimmed their beards as did the Prince of Wales, could conceive the destruction of the American Republic, nor did they, it was conceived for them by deeper men—the Prince of Wales, Cecil Rhodes, Joseph Chamberlain, James Bryce, Lord Beresford and William T. Stead, at the Spofford House in London July 13, 1898, but both heartily accepted parts assigned them by the enemies of the Republic.

Both were poor boys, but married wealth. Hay was raised in Illinois, his father, and his two paternal uncles were undoubted Americans and personal friends of Abraham Lincoln, in whose office young Hay read law and went with him to Washington as a clerk in his official family. Reid was raised, we believe, in Ohio and followed the Union Army as a reporter for the "Cincinnati Commercial," a leading republican paper; thus both men were

early placed in contact with the political leaders and finally came together as owners and editors of the New York Tribune after Horace Greely its great editor and founder had broken down.

As budding statesmen and political writers they became excellent political putty in the skillful hands of British diplomats to shape and control the policy of the Republic. Few, very, very few, among the patriotic Americans in 1898 would select either of them as a reliable American representative, especially not Reid who a few years before had been defeated at the polls as a national republican for the office of vice-president. He was therefore like Gen. Arnold a sour disappointed American, and like Arnold fell an easy victim to the seductive wiles of British influence. The pages of Greek and Roman history are crowded with evils caused by vain and disappointed leaders. Shall that be the experience of America? When we consider what occurred at the meeting of the American Bar Association at Toronto, Canada, in 1913, we tremble for our future. There sat in that convention W. H. Taft, an ex-president of the Republic, who had been lately discarded by republicans. Alton B. Parker a defeated democratic candidate for that office, with numerous senators and congressmen, judges of national and state courts, governors of states and college professors; yet, there was no voice raised in protest against an infamous greeting from George the Fifth of England in which he asked them to co-operate with him, as members of the same race in which all had a pride, to create

a higher nationality by a triple union of England, Canada and the United States.

The most discouraging thot about that treasonable proposal is to think that, nearly to a man, those lawyers were educated in American high schools, colleges or universities by teachers claiming to be Americans, but cramed to overflowing with delusions from British literature, skillfully prepared for American schools and families.

A recent book, "The British Empire and the United States" by Prof. Dunning of the Columbia University is full of deceptive statements, the product of himself and President Butler, aided by James Bryce, late British Ambassador at Washington, organizer of the Anglo-American League and its first president. The book is a review of the alleged peaceful relations of both governments since the Treaty of Ghent, prepared "for those saddened by the European war." Its preface by President Butler says: It is full of encouragement for those who are longing for the day when justice and not force shall rule the destines of the world, and commends it to persons troubled by the correspondence between Mr. Bryan and Sir Edward Grey and the status of such ships as the Dacia and the Wilhelmina. In the introduction Mr. Bryce "emphasizes the consoling thot that the century of peace which has raised the English-speaking peoples from 40,000,000 to 160,000,000 has created among those peoples a sense of kindliness and good will which was never seen before and which is the surest pledge of their future prosperity and progress as well as the maintenance of perpetual friendship between them."

The book is evidently a part of the Earl Grey scheme to re-write American history: Claim everything for England and allow nothing for America. Our 109,000,000 citizens are carefully added to the 40,000,000 subjects of England, and then proclaimed as evidence of British achievement since 1814.

We have had now (April 1915) eight months of her brutalizing European war. We say "her" because even the victims—France, Belgium and Russia, as well as all of the neutral nations of Europe recognize it as English organized and waged to save her tottering empire. And during those eight months not a single friendly act for the American Republic by England appears on record. but continued efforts to destroy American Commerce and to bulldoze or coax us into the strife. British experience in supplying America with Gobden Club literature in 1866 to disturb our industry (See Chap. XX) affords her much encouragement in her present crusade against our independence as a nation. She then had only the assistance of her consular agents and a few American importers, she now has in her service our leading universities and their Oxfordized Rhodes-Scholars enrolled as professors and specially drilled as an army of occupation receiving their orders from their British masters in London.

The dum conduct of American lawyers in the Toronto convention shows that graduates of those universities are no longer animated with the American spirit of an Otis, a Henry or an Adams. They no longer produce virile Americans. Therefore if the Republic is to exist as a home for free-

dom, it must establish and maintain the schools recommended by the Emergonians in 1900, to educate men for all branches of the Civil Service (See Chap. XIX).

Many of those who were dum at Toronto are now with the members of the Anglo-American League and, the Pilgrim Clubs loudly proclaiming the dangers to the Republic from hyfenated citizens, especially the German-Americans, because they protest, in the name of truth and justice, against slanders against the land and race of their forbearers. It will be a sad day for the American Republic when discarded politicians and feed attorneys in the service of England can silence the manly protests of such a valuable and patriotic an element as the German-Americans have shown themselves to be since the days of Washington. Their American record, in both peace and war, is a proud one, it will remain as a shining star in our political firmament to which their posterity may proudly point the children of other forbears to, as a safe guide in duty to America.

James Bryce and the Columbia College professors are not working alone in writing American fiction in the interest of England. "The Pan-Angl Empire" recommending a union of England, the United States, Canada, New Zealand, Australia and South Africa, is a recent contribution in support of George the Fifth's higher nationality. The Century Magazine for March 1915, has an article by R. M. Johnston a military expert on the same subject, in which he tells us that great changes will grow out of the present war in Europe. That a

“grown-up Russia—half Europe and half Asia, will appear. That the Slavs are just beginning to display the huge military power which the future has in store for them, and that they now overtop Europe. Spanning in the north nearly two continents, extending from their frontier near Warsaw more than five thousand miles to Vladivostok on the Pacific, all under the Czar’s flag. That in the south they may extend from Vienna thru Constantinople to Delhi and thence to Tokio.

He also tells us that if Constantinople falls the military spirit and religious zeal of pan-Mohammedanism will create a new Califate at Mecca. Bagdad or Kabul, and a greater empire over South-western Asia, and Africa, while the Afghan princes may regain their lost foothold in India and plant the crescent once more over the towers of Delhi. Then Asia will be divided into three great masses—Russia, China and Mohammedan lands; each mass over twice as large as all the European States lying west of Russia. Evidently thinking that this European and Asian division will scare Americans to seek English protection. He tells us that Canada and the United States together are about the size of all Europe including European Russia; or of China; or of the South American Republics and that here the English-Speaking peoples bulk largest in space and numbers, where a greater association can be formed as a foundation for a greater empire; with its center and bulk of population stretching from Key West to Vancouver; one of its members across the Atlantic, another across the wide Pacific. The English-Speaking world

would then take a new shape and the British Empire would make way for something far stronger, in which not only Great Britain and the United States would find an equal place, but also the four growing young sisters—Canada, New Zealand, Australia and South Africa.

How any man claiming to be an American could seriously offer his countrymen such barefaced delusions is beyond our kin, but it is the British method in dealing with peoples whom she wishes to degrade. If the authors are what they claim to be—Americans, they are simply traitors to the Republic. Bryce and "Ex-Attachs," are Englishmen faithfully serving their king, but they should not be allowed to dictate American policy, or come within our lines to organize treason. Americans, not Englishmen, must guide the Republic of George Washington.

"Ex-Attache" in his usual Sunday article for our metropolitan papers, April 4, 1915, takes "time by the ferelock" and names Elihu Root, Carnegie's attorney as the man to be selected to represent America in the peace congress that will be called to settle the questions growing out of the war. While the Pilgrim clubs have him slated as the Republican nominee for president in 1916. Will time ratify either selection?

CHAPTER XVIII.

**An Address Delivered by the Author Before the
Jefferson Club of Quincy, September, 1900.**

We have reacht a condition in the political affairs of the Republic where it becomes the duty of every true citizens to proclaim his opinions of the men and measures that are steering our ship of State into strange and troubled waters. A man that would remain neutral in this campaign ought to be branded as infamous. The man who would blindly follow a political party after it has abandoned the vital principles of its founders, when he knows that it is being led by dangerous and sordid influences, and doing a greivous wrong to the free institutions of his country, simply because his father, or he himself, has voted with that party in years past, when engaged in noble patriotic work, is unfit to be trusted with a vote, or clast among free-men.

Thotful Americans who have been observing current affairs during the past four years, and especially since John Sherman was shuffled out of the United States senate, thru the Cabinet of President McKinley into private life, in order that such men as Marcus A. Hanna, Wm. R. Day and John Hay take positions at the head of American statesmen to contend with the trained statesmen and diplomats of the world in safe-guarding the liberties of America, must admit that the President's managers had a purpose to gain when they made that shameful shuffle. Yea, a dangerous hidden purpose croucht in the breast of Hanna.

To give that purpose an open field in the diplomacy of the world the nestor of American experience and the brains of the senate was deposed and even then, the field was not clear—and would not be while Thomas B. Reed of Maine was speaker of the House of Representatives and thus stood between the hidden purpose and the treasury of the United States, he too, tho elected to the fifty-sixth congress by 5,526 plurality, must be disposed of; inunendoes were sent flying among the people that Mr. Reed was an obstructionist and offensive to the administration, and would therefore, have its opposition if he desired a re-election as speaker of the house. No man in all America knew the corrupting power of patronage better than Mr. Reed, unfortunately for the nation his personal pride overpowered his sense of national duty, he refused to face the corrupting, undermining influence of official patronage, but resigned his seat in congress and went into private life.

A so called Anglo-Saxon, pliant and obedient to the new powers, was placed in the chair vacated by the great American; the road to the peoples money was cleared of obstruction and the hidden purpose of McKinley's master has been since partly developed.

The democracy of Ohio must take to itself the credit of originating the purpose which now controls the republicans of the nation, perhaps the democracy of Indiana may dispute the claim with Ohio. The credit or the infamy lay between the Democratic United States Senator from Ohio, Calvin S. Brice, and the Democratic United States

Minister to China, Charles Denby, of Indiana. Senator Brice being now dead, Denby must not be allowed to shift the infamy from himself. In fact, the situation of the men shows that Chas. Denby of Indiana is the originator, and suggested to Senator Brice the formation of the syndicate which bears his name. The Brice Syndicate was formed by American and English capitalists to secure and develop concessions of great value in China. Those concessions were negotiated in China thru Charles Denby, and Sir Claud McDonald, the British Minister. They were initiated during Mr. Cleveland's administration and brought to a successful issue just before the Spanish war in the first year of McKinley's administration. The formation of that syndicate brought the greed of two continents into a close alliance which will enable the millions and the sordid purposes of the members to draw from India and Asia a large part of the imperial degradation that has been for centuries crushing the spirit and manhood out of the 483,000,000 people that grovel in those distant nations, and place it on the backs of the free and cheerful toilers of America, in order that the trust managers and the syndicate stockholders in the United States Senate and their associated members in the British parliament might run their millions into billions.

The Brice Syndicate is a sordid alliance of wealth and treason against the compensation allowed Americans in factory, shop and field, and the liberal institutions under which our laboring people have prospered. It is cosmopolitan in its greed, and **will** know neither country, race, nor creed, but the la-

boring victims upon whom it is to fatten. It will copy the Cecil Rhodes, or British, methods in Africa. While flying the flag of christianity, humanity, and liberty, demoralization and blood will mark its course and the faint wail of starvation will follow in its wake. As an adjunct to further the purposes of the Brice Syndicate, the Anglo-American League was formed in London, July 13, 1898, ten days after the destruction of the second Spanish fleet by the American navy. It was organized by the lords and the members of parliament, aided by John Hay, then United States Ambassador to England. Hay's chum and co-worker, Whitelaw Reed, organized the New York branch the following August. The stated purpose of the league is to cultivate a closer friendship between England and America, while the real purpose is to restore the lost jewel—America—to the British Crown. The league being so largely composed of the Anglo-Norman rulers of England and their bastard sons in America, adopted the methods which were used in India, China and Africa, to create conditions in this country that are certain to lead to social anarchy and give England a pretext for interference in our domestic affairs to promote the cause of humanity, **civilization and good government**, and safeguard British interests in the United States and Canada. England never disturbed a nation or a people when she did not give something like this for an excuse. Then her bishops, her college professors, her editors and writers, and her diplomats, with weapons of slander, are turned loose on the victim that is

to be bound by her fetters, as they were on the Dutch Republic in Africa.

For more than a year after the Spanish war the conspirators in the Anglo-American league used all sorts of falsehood to create a prejudice in this country against Germany and her people, and a friendship for England and its people. John Bull was daily represented as parading his war vessels, and straining his political muscles in holding back Kaiser William and the bad kings of Europe, from physically prancing over the anatomy of Uncle Sam.

Their slanderous poison failed to work as they expected. It only caused a political ground swell among the indignant German-Americans, who held meetings in every section of this country in defense of their loyalty as good citizens and the honor of their fatherland, with such earnestness as to send a tremor thru the gang of lying conspirators in both London and Washington.

The resolutions adopted by the German-American editors at St. Louis, April 26, 1899, represented the sentiment of their readers thruout the whole country; as follows:

Systematic and uninterrupted efforts have been made during the last twelve months to destroy by misrepresentations and unfounded sensations the good feeling and old historical friendships between the United States and Germany. We German-Americans and Germans in the old country have been cruelly misrepresented. We proved our loyalty during the last war, and will continue to prove it whatever the future may bring. But, we protest

most emphatically against the falsehoods and intrigues which are intended to interrupt, in the interest of England, the friendship between the United States and Germany. True to the constitution and the traditions of the republic, we take a firm stand against militarism and imperialism knowing that the German-American citizens stand almost unanimously against this new curse which would endanger the welfare and the future of the republic."

Matters had progrest so far that the naval and civil officers of our government forgot the dignity of their stations and joined the British in slander of the Germans. The songs of Captain Coghlan and the criticising letters of Judge Chambers from Samoa were going the rounds of the British American press.

The morning of the day on which the German-American editors met in St. Louis the Cincinnati papers publisht Admiral Kautz's letter from Samoa in which he had a fling at the Germans, as follows: "I am not a king here, but just plain 'Boss of the ranch.' The German Consul had that position up to my arrival, but since then he has been a silent partner. I am afraid he does not like me—in fact I am not at all popular here with the Germans, but I am all right with the English and hope to pull thru with them."

Those sneering officers must have entirely forgotten the days of our civil war, when Germans were flocking by thousands to the Union Standard in defense of the Republic, while the Britons crowded into the British Consul offices claiming exemption from our army as foreign subjects. When

the time comes, and from appearances it seems to be rapidly coming, when the services of true and tried men will be called to save the republic, the German-Americans will be found by hundreds of thousands on the front lines of the nation's defenses. Oh Columbia! Columbia! Where will the Briton be then? Where will the Briton be then?

To divert and appease until after the Presidential election the justly inflamed fury of the German-American, and to quiet Kaiser William who was about to visit his grandmother in London, a change of methods was ordered both here and in London, fulsome praise took the place of slander. Whitelaw Reed, the head of the Anglo-American League in this country, gave the cue to the members of the league on both sides of the Atlantic.

At a Chamber of Commerce banquet in New York, November 21, 1899, Mr. Reed, among other things said:

"These latter days have shown that of all the nations of the earth Great Britain and the United States can give each other the most cheer and do each other the most good. There is a nobler motive on both sides for the same sedulous cultivation of the same cordial friendship.

"In the lamentable wars in which both are for the moment unhappily involved the utmost either need do is to hope for the other as for itself, an honorable end to the conflicts which neither began. Few thinking people seriously suppose either war can have any but one obvious result. The heavier battalions will win.

"I say without hesitation that if there are three great nations in the world that God and nature meant for eternal peace and amity with each other these three are Great Britain, Germany and the United States. There is obviously every reason why England and Germany should now be friends, yet more should the United States welcome and prize the growing friendship of each."

Now notice where and how quickly this cue was taken up. Joseph H. Choat, McKinley's Ambassador to England, at a Thanksgiving dinner in London, November 30th, 1899, among other things said: "America, Great Britain and Germany are the three great commercial nations of the world. Some might imagine that there would be danger in their rivalry, but how can we have any dispute while the great stream of German blood flows in our veins. Chicago and New York are the greatest German cities in the world. How can we fail to believe that we shall retain amity with that great nation. Let England and America join hands across the sea and the peace of the world is assured."

On the same day, Joseph Chamberlain, the demon-apostle of British justice, peace and civilization, speaking at Leicester, England, among other things said:

"The understanding between the United States and Great Britain was indeed a guarantee of the peace of the world. But, there is something more which I think any seeing statesman must have long desired—that we should not remain permanently isolated from the continent of Europe—and I think it must have been evident to everybody that the

natural alliance is between ourselves and the German Empire.

"I cannot conceive that any point can arise in the immediate future which can bring ourselves and Germany into antagonism of interests. On the contrary I can foresee many things in the future which must cause anxiety to the statesmen of Europe, but in which our interests are clearly the same as Germany's; and in which the understanding of which I have spoken in the case of America might if extended to Germany do more perhaps than any combination of arms to preserve the peace of the world. A new triple alliance between the Teutonic race and the two great branches of the Anglo-Saxons would be a potent influence in the future of the world. I use the word alliance but it matters little whether we have an alliance committed to paper, or an understanding existing in the minds of the statesmen of the respective countries."

Mr. A. Maurice Low, the Washington correspondent of the Boston Globe, tells us how we came to a friendly understanding with Great Britain, Mr. Low demonstrates Mr. Hay's fitness for his position as the head of the State department. It was fortunate that he came here fresh from London where he had been instrumental in securing that friendly understanding between the two countries. Mr. Hay cut loose from the old policy of American statesmanship, which was to "regard Russia and France as traditional friends, be indifferent to Germany, and unfriendly to England," and founded a new American policy.

Preceding the speeches of Choate and Chamber-

lain the British press very generally and favorably commented on Whitlaw Reed's New York speech describing it as "A revelation and a true prophecy of a commercial triple alliance" and especially emphasizing the importance of admitting Germany into the Anglo-Saxon bund."

When we consider the Tadpole diplomacy of Hay, have we not good reason for believing that Reed's speech, like Hay's new American policy, was inspired by Lord Salisbury?

James Greelman, writing from Paris, November 18, 1899, to Chicago Tribune, just after our Ambassadors were instructed to sound the European powers on the open-door policy, said:

"This is the first evidence Europe has had that the United States Government regards itself as a world power, competent to take the initiative in all international questions and formulate politics for other nations. It is said that this new departure in foreign policy, from the Monroe doctrine, is due to the growing power of British influence in Washington. Great Britain would have herself proposed the international declaration now advocated by the United States, but for the fact that the policy, if advanced by the British would have excited suspicion among other European powers and would have provoked the certain hostility of Russia. Salisbury, therefore, preferred to have President McKinley take the initiative.

Here is your President, Oh, proud America! willingly used as a British cats-paw, turning his back to the Monroe doctrine, the shield between monarchy and republican government on the

American continent. This is not the only time he has been used by the same power. He was a cat-paw when he called John Hay back from London and made him head of his cabinet under Pauncetote's influence. He was one in June, 1898, when he reprimanded Consul-General Pratt for presenting a United States flag to the Filipinos as an emblem of liberty. He was one when he commissioned W. K. Brice, the manager of the Brice syndicate, then at Hong-Kong, to go at the expense of the nation to Manila in June, 1898, to form a base for that syndicate's concessions in China. He was one when he allowed Gen. Merritt to disgrace American arms in a sham battle with the Spanish army at Manila, August 13, 1898, for the purpose of cheating the Filipinos out of \$900,000 in money, 13,000 prisoners and 22,000 stands of arms to which they were fairly entitled. He was one when he turned American guns upon the Filipinos who had proved brave and faithful allies in arms during the Spanish war. He was one when he commissioned Whitelaw Reed, the New York head of the Anglo-American league, a peace commissioner to Paris. He was one when he commissioned Charles Denby, who negotiated the Brice syndicate concessions in China with Dean C. Worcester as peace commissioners to Manila, and also when he made Prof. Schurman, boiling over with British sympathy and prejudices, chairman of that commission. He was one when he sent young Hay to aid Queen Victoria in Africa. He was one when he muzzled a republican congress from expressing sympathy for the brave Dutch republic in Africa, whom John Bull was strangling for their gold

and diamonds. He was one when he attempted to force the Hay-Pauncefote treaty thru the senate wherein he revived a dead British claim and raised it as a bar against the development of our commercial interests, and one of the great defenses of the republic. And when he accepted, with hat in hand, the gracious permission of her majesty to build the Nicaragua Canal with American money for the benefit of England. He was much more than a cats-paw when he lowered the flag of his country in Alaska and surrendered to England nearly 2,000 miles of American gold-bearing territory with a valuable outlet on our Pacific coast. He is now a mere British cats-paw in China and will continue so until stript of power by the people whom he is betraying.

If we turn to page 356 of the Republican Campaign text-book for 1898 we will find this entry:

"On the first day of May Commodore Dewey sailed into the harbor of Manila and there wrought one of the most famous victories in the rich annals of American naval exploits, by destroying the entire Spanish squadron under Admiral Montejó, practically reducing the fortifications of Cavite and investing the citadel of the Philippines in conjunction with the insurgents under Aguinaldo. This great victory which resulted in the annihilation of all the Spanish ships in those waters and the death of hundreds of Spanish sailors, was gained without the loss of a man on our side."

This text-book was prepared in the summer of 1898 for use of republican speakers in the congressional election of that year. It was before the

Hanna and Brice syndicate ordered McKinley to suppress Aguinaldo and steal the islands for a base of operations against China. It was prepared before young Brice left Hong Kong for Manila. It was done before the heads of Messes in the Brice syndicate recognized the value to them of the Philippines. It was before English interests became alarmed at the prospect of having a republican government established in Asia fronting her colonies in India, China and Australia.

At the time that book was being prepared Admiral Dewey at Manila, Consul-General Wildman at Hong Kong, and Consul-General Pratt at Singapore were working in harmony with Aguinaldo and the Filipino leaders. This is shown by the address delivered to Pratt June 8th. at Singapore by a committee of Filipinos, as follows:

"Sir, the Philippine colony resident in this port composed of representatives of all social classes have come to present their respects to you as the legitimate representative of the great and powerful American Republic in order to express our eternal gratitude for the moral and material protection extended by Admiral Dewey to our trusted leader, General Emilio Aguinaldo who has been driven to take up arms in the name of 8,000,000 Filipinos in defense of those principles of justice and liberty of which your country is the foremost champion. Our countrymen at home in our beloved land hope that the United States, your nation, perserving in its humane policy, will officially second the program arranged between you, sir, and General Aguinaldo in this port of Singapore, and

secure to us our independence under the protection of the United States.

Our warmest thanks are especially due to you, Sir, personally for having been the first to cultivate relations with General Aguinaldo and arrange for co-operating with Admiral Dewey, thus supporting our aspirations, which time and subsequent actions have developed and caused him to meet with the applause and approbation of your nation.

Finally we request you to convey to your illustrious President and the American people and to Admiral Dewey our sentiments of sincere gratitude, and our most fervent wishes for their prosperity."

In his reply, Mr. Pratt, among other things said:

"Now we have news of the brilliant achievements of your own distinguished leader, General Aguinaldo, co-operating on land with the Americans at sea. When six weeks ago I learned that General Aguinaldo had arrived incognito in Singapore I immediately sought him out. An hour's interview convinced me he was the man for the occasion, and having communicated with Admiral Dewey, I accordingly arranged for him to join the latter which he did at Cavite. I am thankful to have been the means of bringing about the arrangement between General Aguinaldo and Admiral Dewey which has resulted so happily. I can only hope that the eventful outcome will be all that can be desired for the happiness and welfare of the Filipinos."

Presenting an American flag to the delegation Mr. Pratt said: "This flag was borne in battle, and

is the emblem of that liberty that you are seeking to attain."

The address and reply were published in the Singapore papers and were sent to the Department of State by Mr. Pratt for publication, and information of our people, but was there suppressed by Mr. Day and the consul remonstrated for saying that Aguinaldo was the man for the occasion and was sought out by him, and that the arrangements made between Aguinaldo and Dewey had resulted happily. Such action was unauthorized and could not be approved.

The presentations of the address and flag were on the 8th of June, Day's dispatch repudiating the friendly sentiments was dated June 16th; between these dates the wires between Singapore, Hong Kong, London and Washington were made hot by British consuls and ministers, aided by the Brice syndicate. A Filipino Republic at the door of India copying from the grand truths embraced in the American Declaration of Independence would be a dangerous neighbor near the discontented millions of Borneo and the Malay peninsula close by.

The American people will never know what arguments were produced by the British government to cause an administration representing the country of Washington and Jefferson, of Monroe and Jackson, of Lincoln and Grant, of Webster and Clay and of Seward and Blaine to trample upon that immortal declaration and to censure one of its officers for presenting our flag as an emblem of liberty to a struggling people who were at that time

our brave and faithful allies on the battle field. The secret of that black transaction will remain with those who are in the Brice syndicate and with their pliant tools representing the American and British governments in Washington.

The Singapore address and Mr. Pratt's reply evidently caused young Brice to be sent from Hong Kong and Major Bell, of General Merritt's staff, from Washington to the Philippines as secret agents. Bell representing McKinley, and Brice the syndicate, both paid by our government. Nothing has been made public from Brice's mission, but Major Bell in a report dated Manila August 29, 1898 among other things said:

"There are a number of Filipinos whom I have met, among them General Aguinaldo, and a few of his leaders whom I believe thoroly and fully capable of self-government. The main reliance for small positions and many larger ones would be upon people who know no standard of government other than that the Spāniards have furnisht, their sense of equity and justice seems not fully developd, and their readiness to coerce those who come under their power has been strongly illustrated in this city since our occupation.

There is not a particle of doubt but that Aguinaldo and his leaders will resist any attempt of any government to reorganize a colonial government here. They are especially bitter toward Spaniards but equally determined not to submit longer to being a colony of any other government. What they would like best of all would be a Filipino Republic with an American protectorate, for none

realize their inability more clearly than they to maintain a republic without protection from some strong power."

Since we have adopted English methods we smear our victim with slander; we ignored Major Bell's report and now say that Agunaldo and his followers are murderers, robbers, tyrants and bribe takers. Schurman's report to the President dared not go that far; he quoted from an insurgent proclamation showing that what was demanded by the revolution of 1898 "Was the expulsion of the friars and the restitution to the people of their lands, with a division of the episcopal sees between Spanish and native priests, parliamentary representation for the Filipinos, freedom of the press, religious toleration, economic autonomy, and laws similar to those of America." Clearly showing that Agunaldo and his countrymen knew what they wanted and had heard about America.

Failing to suppress the insurgents Spain agreed to grant their demands and pay \$2,000,000 when Agunaldo and his cabinet arrived in Hong Kong, where they were to remain for six months. A portion of that money was paid, not as a bribe but for the surrender of arms, the destruction and loss of property, etc.

The commission says, "The promises were never carried out, Spanish abuses began afresh, in Manila alone more than 200 men being executed.

"When war broke out between Spain and America, Augustine the Spanish Governor-General, sought to secure the support of the Filipinos to

defend Spain against America, promising them autonomy, but the Filipinos did not trust him."

The money Agunaldo received from Spain was deposited in the banks at Hong Kong and Shanghai and used by the Filipino Junto to buy arms and other supplies, when Agunaldo and twelve of his leaders were taken to Manila on a United States vessel, a portion of that money past thru the hands of Consul Wildman at Hong Kong and by him expended for munitions of war sent to Agunaldo.

If we turn to the New York Tribune, Sept. 24, 1899, we will find in its Washington correspondence extracts from letters of officers stationed at Manila giving the reason why Dewey returned home. It is there alleged that Dewey before a meeting of the peace commissioners charged Otis with making lying reports. That Dewey, Schurman, Denby and Worcester recognized the full capability of the Filipinos for self government in local affairs, but Otis dissents. That there had been \$40,000 offered by masters of trading vessels for clearances, that such clearances issued by Otis was not honored by Dewey. That such temptations were notorious and unless handled quickly and sternly, and an accounting called for, there will be an administration installed in the Philippines "Which in spots—and large spots—will be as scandalous as anything ever known to Spain; that there are already ominous whispers of irregularities, but the censor system is all pervading."

The censor system is the civilizing agent of imperialism. It is the cloak under which McKinley warms the honor of our flag; under its shelter he

assimulates the benevolence of the Declaration of Independence with the methods of George III.

Consul General Pratt says, that he sought out Aguinaldo in Singapore at Dewey's request and sent him to Hong Kong, that in the second interview with Aguinaldo before his departure from Singapore to join Dewey, he said "That he hoped the United States would assume protection of the Philippines at least long enough to allow the inhabitants to establish a government of their own, in the organization of which he would desire American advice and assistance. And that this was explained in his dispatch to Secretary of State Day on the 30th of April, 1898.

The most scandalous piece of business that ever transpired under the American flag, was the sham battle of August 13th 1898, when Manila was surrendered to General Merritt by the Spanish army. You can find a detailed account of that disgraceful affair in McClure's Magazine for June, 1899, page 171 written by Oscar Davis. The Belgian Consul at Manila Edward Andre, arranged for that sham fight and gave the details to Davis. It is not my desire to censure either Dewey or Merritt for the part they took because they had their orders from the President, their commander-in-chief, which as soldiers they were bound to obey. And that duty is the danger of militarism under all systems of government. It is the one that our republic must avoid if its citizens desire their freedom.

Andre asked General Merritt, during the negotiations for the surrender of the Spaniards, what his relations would be to the insurgents? Merritt re-

plied that he had come with instructions not to treat with the Indians, not to recognize them and not to promise them anything.

Understand me, I waste no tears over the misfortunes of Agninaldo or his people, but I do grieve about the disgrace that has been brought on the fair name of our republic, and the lowering of our flag from its high position to the sordid uses of imperial-greed and conquest.

Hanna and his imperialists are attempting a confidence game upon the stomachs of the people using a picture of a full dinner pail, they are going over the country appealing to the bellies instead of the heads of laboring people; to their appetites instead of their intellects. They expect to so stimulate the average American stomach that the head will sleep until after the election. Then as Vanderbilt has said, "The people be damned." Then the rattling pangs of hunger loudly banging on the walls of empty stomachs may awaken, when too late, the deluded sleeping heads to reflect on the fact that in the future they must face and contend with something more real than a picture. They must compete with the 12 cents a day labor of China and the 6 cents of India, or starve. Hanna himself tells us that our shops and factories are now producing over 33 per cent more goods than our own people can consume and that commerce must find a foreign market for the surplus therefore he favors commercialism.

Keep in view the fact that looms up everywhere in history, that commercialism has ever been the great social corrupter and destroyer of nations.

The population of the world is about 1,500,000,000 of these Asia, including China, has 830,000,000, Europe 375,000,000, Africa and Oceanica have 170,000,000, North America 90,000,000 and South America 35,000,000. The nations of Europe and North America are manufacturers, Europe is producing more of a surplus than the United States. Now let us send our 33 percent surplus to Europe or bring hers to America, we have surplus of 66 per cent to dispose of. How shall that be done? Commercialism, imperialism and militarism combined will cut prices and wages and bring the laboring man's nose closer to the grinding stone of poverty.

I have never seen the time when the labor of America needed protection more than it does today. The happiness and contentment of the people is worth more to the republic than silver and gold.

The imperialists tell us that they have made a great world-power of our republic. I say to them that they have lowered and disgraced our flag that they have dimmed its light before the opprest of the world. That we became a great world power when Grant hustled the French and Austrian imperialist out of Mexico and forced England to pay \$15,500,000 to America, or be hustled out of Canada.

McKinley wandering from the ways of peace, liberty and safety has no desire to retrace his steps, but seems to revel in the shedding of his country's blood and trampling on the teachings of our early patriots.

While we cannot reclothe with warm flesh and red pulsating blood the mouldering bones of the brave American soldiers who have fallen victims on

the alter of imperial greed under our flag in the Philippines, nor silence the heartbreaking sobs of the widow and the orphan, wipe away the scalding tears of the father, the mother, the brother and the sister, by recalling to each victim the spirit that animated the manly form and give him to the loved ones at home. Yet with our votes we can deprive those who have betrayed and offered them as victims, of the power to sacrifice any more American lives, or shed one more drop of freedoms blood in their base subservency to England in a sordid crusade for individual wealth.

CHAPTER XIX.

EMERGONIANS.

If patriotism, if love of country, is commendable, then we print an article in today's Journal that is worthy of the careful consideration of every genuine American. The article is entitled, "Emergonian Leagues." It is from the pen of Capt. Piggott, a man who attested his patriotism on many bloody fields. The article is very wisely and strongly drawn. It proposes to organize leagues for the education of the American people in genuine Americanism. It is, as we have said, a wise proposition, and patriotic to the core. It is not at all partisan. It aims at the destruction of no organized party, nor at the upbuilding of a new party. It aims merely at the education of our people in all that is dear to genuine Americanism. We hope that the readers of *The Journal* will give the article a very careful, thoughtful perusal—*Quincy Journal*.

In advancing our labors into the broad field of patriotism for the purpose of elevating man; protecting his rights; beautifying his surroundings; and producing a higher type of domestic animals; we make no pretense whatever to the ponderous wisdom of a political economist; the literary polish of a college professor; the profound reasoning of a natural philosopher; nor to the inspired illumination of a prophet; but we have lived and mixed with the men of America for more than half of the most progressive century ever experienced by civilized man, and have had an humble share in their industrial achievements; their military exploits and sufferings; and in their political triumphs and de-

feats. We know how to sympathize with the struggles of poverty and to pity the vanities of mere wealth, because we have occasionally touched elbows with both and have had a taste of their sweet, and of their bitter fruits.

To reestablish the old vigilance, restore general prosperity, revive the affections of the people for the early patriots, and to transmit unimpaired to posterity the liberal institutions established under Washington. The Emergonians have been organized and duly incorporated under the laws of the State of Illinois. (See Appendix I.)

Emergonian Leagues are established as non-partisan Watch-Towers of American liberty, toleration, concord and peace, where neighbors may meet for both mental improvement and social pleasure. To consult as citizens, relieved from party trammels, at the altar of a common country, about the best methods for promoting the public good, improving their own conditions, and making pleasant their home surroundings by maintaining good roads and establishing parks and gardens, and feel that they are not working alone in a hopeless cause, but are in close touch with other bands of patriotic citizens laboring in every corner of the Republic, with like methods for the elevation and prosperity of themselves and the glory of the Republic. They afford a nucleus for the formation of a civic grand army of patriotic men and women, who respect themselves and believe in the institutions of their country, and are willing to give a small portion of their time to the creation of a pure and safe national sentiment.

We have the past experience of the world as well as that of our own country to guide our efforts in promoting the welfare and good-fellowship of the American people, to which we most heartily and wholly commit ourselves. The people and rulers of the Eastern Hemisphere may manage their governmental and social affairs in their own sweet way without any entangling alliances, advice or interference by us; and they must refrain from intrigue and intermeddling with our domestic affairs, and keep to themselves their criminals, their paupers, their anarchists, their immorality and their despotism. We deem their exclusion as a matter of national defense as well as a protection to the essential peace, happiness and comforts due to our own people by a growing civilization under broad and liberal institutions.

The governmental and diplomatic affairs of Europe, are in the hands of men generally selected from privileged classes and highly educated and specially trained for that purpose. If we desire to maintain the peace, honor and perpetuity of the American Republic we must produce men of equal education and training, not from a privileged class, but from the great body of our citizenship. Our future hope therefore of security and honorable existence as a Republic lies in the intellectual, political and moral education of a sufficient number of our people in suitable national schools to fit them for the civil service. The public school system must be cherished as the apple of the eye, as the safest anchor to hold the ship of state in position during the wild storms of human passions that seems to suddenly break at irregular periods over the affairs of all nations.

We shall therefore contend for a wider scope to our public schools by connecting them thru state colleges with a National University, where, after a competency mental and physical examination, at about the age of fifteen years, students showing intellectual merits and a high moral character shall be promoted for full development in the science of government and diplomacy, at the public expense, as are those at West Point for the army, and at Annapolis for the navy. The National University should be solely in charge of teachers educated in American schools and its graduates should have preference in appointments to the civil service of the Republic, which will place intelligence and true American manhood and sentiment, instead of unpatriotic social apes and snobs, in the representative positions of the Republic at home and abroad; and thus keep the service from becoming an inheritance for the benefit of a pliable, time-serving official aristocracy.

The best interest of the Republic demands that the entrance to the Civil Service shall lead only from the public schools—from the people, and not from a class such as is liable to be created by the present system. By extending the scope of the public schools thru state colleges to a National University, where youths of merit may be educated at public expense for the service of the Republic which will soon produce an army of American scholars and statesmen, from the ranks of the people, that will be a credit to our institutions, and upon whom the people may rely with perfect safety in every emergency. It will produce millions of scholars of high

moral character among the mass of the people, by stimulating in the lower schools, before reaching the age of fifteen years, the ambition of youth to strive for the prize of promotion to the state high school or college, even tho they fail in securing such prize. It will tend to keep proper behavior and manly conduct before the minds of our youth in the lower schools till they become a part of their nature and go with them thru life. It will open an inviting door thru which the sons of the poor, who show mental and physical ability and moral character, may pass to a bright and useful life as citizens of the Republic. It will elevate our public school system and throw a shield of protection over it, thru which neither foreign nor demestic enemies can safely strike. It will place men in the public services of the Republic at home and abroad, whose minds will be entirely free from the poison of Oxford schools, teaching false theories of government, in which the rights of the people are ignored and those of the classes advanct.

The cost of such enlargement will be a mere trifle compared with the benefits that will be derived by the Republic. We have now a number of state normal schools that can be utilized in making the first step upwards from the county high schools, where the necessary preparations can be made for entry to the National University.

Promotions from the local public school should be at about the age of fifteen years, and then only such youth as win the prize in a fair competitory examination. The successful contestants should then pass into the hands of the state, for a course

of instruction in the Normal or State College, where, after a successful competency examination, they are admitted to the National University, and pass into the hands of the Republic, in about the same manner as students are admitted to West Point and Annapolis. At the age of fifteen the moral character of the student will show itself in his school record, which should be considered in the examination. Only those who show mental, physical, and moral perfection should be promoted, as such give the best assurance of ability to render future valuable services to the Republic.

Such a system would not only elevate the schools, but would also make the Civil Service fairly represent the whole people. It would place the farmer's, the mechanic's, and the laborer's sons on something like an equality with the sons of wealth in commencing the battle of life.

We believe the fullest and most perfect development of man's mental and physical strength, in both city and country, demands occasional relaxations from toil of every nature, and a participation in rational amusements, in the beautifying of his home surroundings, and in the improvement of domestic animals. No man can cultivate a sweet, loving nature, nor a spark of patriotic fire while constantly engaged in dreary toil, or while surrounded by poverty and rags in a filthy city, or while struggling over bad roads, or thru weeds and briars in the country, nor while attending scrub stock that look and feel still scrawnier than himself. The warm sunshine of a cheerful, pleasing life must reach a man's heart and urge him to climb to a higher

sphere, else he drops to the semi-condition of the brute. As a means to stimulate the spirit of man in earnest efforts for his own improvement, and in taking a livelier interest in the welfare and elevation of his fellows, he should himself have within reach suitable means of recreation in manly and elevating amusements, amid beautiful surroundings. We shall therefore advocate the establishment of public parks and the construction of good roads by both cities and townships; also, the planting of ornamental trees and shrubs around suburban and rural homes, and the raising of only the highest type of domestic animals, which will tend to anchor the affections of the farmer's son to the cheerful fields and beautiful gardens of childhood as the most ennobling and desirable spots on earth. Which will, instead of repelling, as now, draw to the country from over-crowded cities those who desire pure atmosphere and the beautiful in nature.

The Emergonians have no secrets. They recognize the existence and necessity of partisans under our representative system of government by the people, for the people. Their membership enters all parties and creeds, carrying with it a pledge to maintain and advocate the liberal institutions of the Republic and the welfare of the people. They propose no war on Englishmen as such, but will resist to the utmost in the political forum and at the ballot box, the men who, under the meretricious claims of an Anglo-Saxon paternity and the kindred of a common language, would lead our people away from the grand political maxims of the fathers of the Republic, which have drawn to our shores

millions of the best people from Germany, Ireland, Scotland, Wales and other military-ridden nations of Europe. Men of brain and muscle, whose skill, strength and industry have placed America at the head of the nations.

Washington's Farewell Address.

The seventeenth of the coming September (1896) will complete the first centennial of Washington's Farewell Address to the American people, prepared and offered by him as a political chart for their guidance on the eve of his voluntary retirement from the presidency of the Republic, which had been established principally by his own wisdom and valor. In that precious document the father of our country directs us how to properly conduct our political affairs to the best advantage. The startling political events, which have occurred in our history during the century just closing, have each given emphasis to Washington's words of warning. Our condition today gives them still greater significance for the future. They came from a matured, unselfish, and patriotic mind, purified by forty-five years of mental and physical toil in behalf of human freedom and civilization, surrounded and advised by patriotic men, equally as heroic and unselfish as himself, men who had searched the annals of the world for forms of government suitable to the aspirations of intelligent freemen; who, after failing to find anything in ancient or modern history, suitable to their condition and desires, drew upon their own experience and intelligence for the form which has placed the American Republic on a pinnacle far above all other systems that now

exist, or which have found a place in history. We, who have inherited the political privileges secured by Washington and the fathers of the Republic, should frequently recur to that address as a sacred document, from which to draw political inspiration and wisdom. It well deserves to be constantly in our minds, and used as a reliable chart to safely guide us in political action from drifting to destruction on the shoals and reefs of partisan passion.

The Emergonian League was organized for the purpose of reviving the affections of the people for Washington and the patriots of the revolution, and to aid in transmitting unimpaired to posterity the liberal institutions established by them. To labor for political toleration, concord and peace. We have accepted the Emergonian name, and have adopted its principles—which are based on the sentiments of the Farewell Address, to guide us in our work. By keeping close to those noble sentiments we cannot offend the lovers of our country, whether populists, democrats, or republicans. Nor should they wound the national pride of foreigners who come among our people for legitimate business or pleasure. The present year of general political contention is a most opportune time to recur to the sentiments of the great Washington for moderation and wisdom. We, therefore, suggest to the different patriotic associations, known as the Sons and the Daughters of the American Revolution, and other descendants of the early patriots, that steps be taken by them to hold Washington Memorial services in the churches thruout the Republic on Sunday, September 13; and, that it would be ap-

propriate to have union political meetings, or grand rallies, at the different county seats, on Thursday, September 17, the centennial anniversary of the Address. Such meetings would strengthen American patriotism and afford the world, especially our Canadian neighbors, an object lesson on free institutions in the hands of intelligent and tolerant people. Thus aid in securing the objects for which Washington labored and for the fulfillment of the wishes upon which he evoked heaven's choicest blessings; that our brotherly affection be perpetuated and our efforts be stamp'd with wisdom and virtue in order that the happiness of the people, 'Under the auspices of liberty, may be made complete, by so careful a preservation and so prudent a use of this blessing, as will acquire to them the glory of recommending it to the applause, the affection, and the adoption, of every nation which is yet a stranger to it.'

We are informed by the Address that it was prepared because its author was solicitous about the welfare of his country, and apprehended future danger from party spirit and foreign influences. That its sentiments were the result of much reflection and observation, and were presented for solemn contemplation and frequent review as important to the permanent felicity of the people. That the sentiments were offered with the more freedom because the people could only see in them the disinterested warnings of a parting friend, who could possibly have no personal motive to bias his counsel.—U. and R. America.

Partisans.

The liberal principles of the American Republic were inspired by the wisdom of ages. They have been entrusted to the care of the people for the benefit of humanity, without reservations or restrictions in favor of casts or classes. The historical examples of all preceding forms showed the great Washington and the early patriots the danger of placing the lives, property and opinions of the people at the mercy of a military power. The will of all the people, expressed in the law of the land, is the supreme power before which all must equally bow. This power represents the will of a majority. All the people were not of the same opinion when our constitution was adopted, but all cheerfully submitted to the will of the majority. It requires parties and partisan action as stated periods to ascertain the will of the majority, because opinions and conditions are constantly changing.

Education, toleration and vigilance are the safeguards of American liberty. A free people can no more think alike than they can in physical conformation look alike; hence so long as true political freedom exists there will be a diversity of political and religious opinions to give life and tone to our political and moral actions, and create the vigilance that is necessary to guard our political and religious freedom, which will not long abide with either selfishness, ignorance or indifference—the mothers of intolerance and oppression. We must not be guilty of the grave error of believing that our present institutions are safely and permanently established and will hereafter maintain themselves while the people

rush over each other in a mad chase after dollars and cents, and be dormant about the moral and political affairs of the Republic.

In the discharge of our duties as citizens we should attach ourselves to the political party that comes nearest, in its declarations and actions, to harmonize with our views; but should never become such blind followers, nor such confiding partisans as to be unable to separate ourselves from a political party when it ceases to be guided by the moral, social and material interests of our country and the living principles of humanity. The interests of our own people should not be maintained in a doubtful manner, but be most vigorously proclaimed and so transparent as to be visible to the whole world thru the lives of those who are selected as leaders and representatives of the people. When men of doubtful or contradictory political records force themselves to the front as political standard bearers, by means of party machinery, over the will of the people; or become identified with foreign interests, defeat should be as certain to follow them as day does the night. It is only by this independent method that our full duty as citizens can be patriotically discharged, and our liberal and humane institutions be strengthened and perpetuated for the benefit of mankind.

Education and toleration will enable us to recognize the political and moral worth of our neighbor, tho he neither belongs to our church nor party. No state, church or party has a monopoly of the morality and patriotism of the Republic. We believe the grand principles of civilization exist and

are today as strong in the South as they are in the North, and in the West as much so as in the East. No lover of the Republic will attempt to deprive one section of our country of its reputation for morality and patriotism for the benefit of some other section. Such attempts may be traced to foreign influences from which we have already suffered too much. We have now one flag, one country, one people; the slander that injures one section will injure all. A political or moral wound inflicted on any part of our body politic will leave a scar that for evil influence will be felt thruout the whole system for many generations. No people understand this better than those who are engaged in creating discord among our people. It is the weapon by which the British extend and maintain conquests over distant peoples; and draw to themselves the largest tribute of the world, which goes to enrich a few and make the many poor and miserable.

Until our literature becomes purely American in both name and sentiment, our morality and patriotism must contend against an insidious foreign influence that never rests, but like a dry-rot constantly eats into our civilization.

The appellation "Anglo-Saxon" should never be applied to our people or their free institutions; because it is the cognomen of a debased people who were crusht under the iron-heel of Normandy, and remained groveling serfs for centuries; whose best representatives are now found among the pauper and criminal classes in the slums and poorhouses of England. The sturdy German, Welsh, Scotch and Irish races, who settled America and fought for

its liberty, never submitted as feudal-serfs to the Norman tyrant; nor were they curst with the sluggish and cowardly blood of the dispised race which tamely submitted, and thereafter meekly remained attacht to the soil as human chattels.

This false claim of Anglo-Saxonism to everything that is pure or free in this country should be repudiated by our people. The literature that contains it should be excluded as mental poison from American schools. But this cannot be done so long as we continue to designate our language as English instead of American.—U. and R. America.

Right Not Might.

Our country, right or wrong, while not entirely free from the objections of pure morality, is the safest political motto for us to observe; but let us see to it that our country is always right. Then right makes our might; yet not sufficient to guard the Republic from the aggressions of a country whose might always makes right; and never misses an opportunity to take unfair advantages in securing its own interests at the expense of others.

The wealth of our country and the defenseless condition of our coast cities offer a luring prize to foreign enemies to demand and successfully take tribute from our citizens and destroy their liberty. It would be criminal negligence to allow our coast defenses to remain any longer as they now are. We do not need a large standing army; but our coast and lake cities should be strongly fortified to repel sudden attacks from the marauding flying squadrons of England—the pirates of civilization. Our navy should be enlarged for the same purpose

and be constantly in readiness with a strong auxiliary mercantile marine to defend our coast and commerce. Then only can the Republic be assured of peace. The enemy has videttes within our borders creating and watching for favorable opportunities to undermine our liberties. The men whose pens and tongues were the most active in the interest of the late revenue reform clubs and defending the silver fraud, have them now just as active writing and talking about a universal peace, the fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man, good will and international arbitration. When our representatives in Congress propose a system of harbor defenses, these pretended Americans promoting foreign interests, grow eloquent in demanding public economy, while they are as silent as clams on the fact that our only enemy, England, is constantly drawing her military and naval lines closer and closer around us, and is quietly adding battleship after battleship to an already powerful navy. Silent to the fact that British guns now command the approaches to our great lakes, and that she has established a strong line of forts and arsenals along our northern borders, and maintains fortified naval stations on the islands of the seas that are within easy striking distance of our shores. And has a host of word-jugglers, claiming to be Americans and friends of peace and liberty, to lull us to sleep by the repetition of delusive songs about a kindred race, a common language and a mother country, till the means of our conquest and destruction are complete.

Those who honestly talk about and believe in the beauties of universal peace and international arbi-

tration, should transfer their labors from this country and confine them entirely to England, where so much of the comforts of the people are taken for the benefit of a privileged few, and devoted, not to the diffusion of general intelligence, social comforts, morality and peace, but to the building of enormous battleships and destructive implements of war; to suppress domestic liberty and threaten the peace of nations. The liberty, humanity and civilization of the world have no fears of attacks from our Republic; but the latter has much reason to be constantly on guard, especially against sudden attacks from England. Modern guns and battleships are not made in a day, a month, nor a year. And when danger threatens they cannot be safely purchast from other nations. If we desire peace, we must be fully prepared for war; then only will our rights be respected; then only can we defy the whole power of European despotism to injure us on our own soil.

We believe in the general principles of the Monroe Doctrine as a means of national defense, but we believe still more firmly in the wisdom of Washington's Farewell Address. In all of our intercourse with nations, we should remember and practice the political wisdom of this address. We must confine our energies in political reforms and morality within the lines of our country, and so far as our domestic affairs are concerned, insist that other nations or individuals shall under no pretense attempt to disturb the harmony of our people, or the institutions of the Republic. If we succeed in making our own citizens intelligent, pros-

perous and contented, and refrain from encroaching upon or disturbing the social and political affairs of other nations, we will have fully discharged our duty to God, humanity and civilization, and will thereby more surely obtain the brightest and most lasting honors for ourselves and our posterity.

We are now educating in the principles of self-government, of justice and liberty; of tender and sympathetic humanity, and of generous and heroic emotions, not only the present citizen, but the men of America who are to appear a thousand years hence to take our places and conduct the liberal affairs of the Republic. Each generation, under proper surroundings, will be born with higher aspirations, brighter intellects and broader humanity than those of their parents.

Should this Republic adopt the marauding, ever encroaching and grasping methods of the Norman invaders of England, who conquered and made menials of its Anglo-Saxon rulers nearly a thousand years ago, and still hold their spiritless descendants in a base condition; and who have imprest their own treacherous character on the British Nation, till it is looked upon as a faithless government without a friend among the nations of the earth. Then we may expect our children and their descendants to inherit the same treacherous and grasping disposition, and transmit it intensified from generation to generation; till, like the descendants of the Anglo-Norman, they become hateful to true civilization and humanity.

We must cheerfully concede and respect the rights of other nations, as we wish them to concede

and respect ours. This is the Golden Rule of true civilization, of national equity, toleration and humanity; and accords with Washington's Farewell Address. The development of our resources; the care, education and elevation of our own people will afford us ample employment for generations to come, before the various races now sheltered by our flag are fully assimilated as reliable citizens of the Republic.—U. and R. America.

Spirit of 1776.

Let us exalt the American name, and revere the American spirit, and guard well the inheritance handed down by the men who fought at Bunker Hill, King's Mountain and New Orleans. Down with the Tories is as good a rallying cry as it was a century ago. The men who would plunge us into financial bondage to England and give that country the control of Spanish America are Tories of the worst type. This country must be ruled by men who, whether natives or foreigners, are thoroly Americans in sentiment.—Atlanta Constitution.

The Emergonian is gratified to note this growing national sentiment of true patriotism among the people of the South. The inheritance from those who bravely fought at Bunker Hill, King's Mountain and New Orleans was not destroyed in the late war, which is manifested in the Constitution's desire to exalt the American name. The future of the Republic is largely in the hands of the men whose patriotism is aroused and directed by such a glorious American inheritance. Neither the anarchistic teachings of an Altgeld nor the Tory sentiments of a temporary Cobden Club administration can lead

astray the patriotism of those whose ancestors laid the foundation for American freedom and independence. We would much prefer to trust our liberties to such men as Senator Morgan, of Alabama, than to a set of political jackdaws like J. Sterling Morton, of Nebraska, who has been so active in misleading our farmers in the interest of the Cobden Club.

We thank God that the bloody shirt has gone out of sight forever. We hope to live till we can have the satisfaction of voting for a man who wore gray as readily as we will vote in November for one who wore the blue; when all distinctions between them, or their descendants, will be buried in the patriotism of a common country.—U. and R. America.

CHAPTER XX.

THE COBDEN CLUB.

Before the cannon smoke disappeared from the battle field of our Civil War, May 1865, our consul at Liverpool notified the State Department that great efforts will now be made by English capatilists and manufacturers to induce us to reduce our tariff and permit them to do all our manufacturing. They are beginnnng to stir this matter already. Our warm personal friends will be put forward to move in the matter, such as John Bright, Goldwin Smith and others, who have stood by us during the war. I have seen decisive evidence of this purpose here. They will struggle hard to break down our tariff: there will be a terrible pressure put on our government."

After the Cobden Club was organized the following notice appeared in the New York Times, edited by Jennings, an Englishman:

"The Cobden Club we believe, represented to the English Government that public libraries and other institutions in this country might be desirous of obtaining copies of the publications issued by the society. Some of these publications are very useful and all are interesting to political students. Mr. E. M. Archibald, the British Consul at this port, has been requested to ascertain if there are any libraries or public institutions in this district which desire to receive a set of the Cobden Club publications. They would, of course, be supplied without charge

to the institution. Applications should be address to Mr. Archibald, who will at once attend to them."

After a period of 14 years, in 1880, when it was supposed that the poison from those publications had time to diffuse itself from our schools and libraries thru the public mind, the battle for British supremacy in our markets commenced in earnest. Then the final charge was made and failed.

The club gave annual dinners. That of 1880, July 10, was held at Greenwich, England. The members were conveyed from the House of Commons stairs by a special steamboat.

The secretary of the club, Hon. Thomas Bailey Potter, M. P., announced, among other things, that resident secretaries had been appointed in New York and Chicago, and said: "We have now a ministry in power who are very strongly identified with everything connected with Cobden's principles, both political and economical. I may say that we have now in the Cabinet of fourteen ministers, twelve who are members of the club. And of the dinners we have held during the last fourteen years, seven have been presided over by members of the present cabinet. * * * We have done the best we can on the continent, my eyes are turned westward, the Cobden Club is going to fight our friends in the United States."

Thru the New York and Chicago secretaries 12,000,000 copies of an address by the Cobden Club over the signature of Augustin Mongredien, entitled "The Western Farmer of America," were sent broadcast thru the west during the campaign of 1880.

The purpose was to press the idea on the farmer

that he was swindled by the "Robber Baron" manufacturers of America 40 per cent on all goods purchast of them. Notwithstanding this onslaught our farmers remained true to the American system of protection, which wisely collects taxes from foreigners at the ports of the Republic instead of sending tax gatherers to the urban and rural doors of our own citizens, fostering spies and informers.

At a banquet in London in 1880, Mr. Potter, secretary of the club said: "The United States do not approach the question from the same point of view as ourselves. The object of their statesmen is not to secure the largest amount of wealth for the country generally, but to keep up, by whatever means, the standard of comfort among the laboring classes."

On July 16, the same year, the London Times editorially said:

"It is to the new-world that the Cobden Club is chiefly looking as the most likely sphere for its vigorous foreign policy. It has done what it can in Europe, and it is now turning its eyes westward and bracing itself for the struggle which is to come. It can not rest while the United States are unsubdued, so it will go on plying them with arguments and statistics, with books and pamphlets and speeches, until reason has at length done its work and has dislodged Protection from the great stronghold in which it has intrencht itself. * * *

"We wish the Cobden Club the best success in the arduous encounter which lies before it. We hope Mr. Augustus Mongredien's excellent volumes and the other publications of the Club will, between

them, carry the United States by storm and thrust reason into all minds, whether willing or unwilling to admit it. But we dare not venture to be prophetic. We have heard too many prophecies, and have waited long and vainly for their accomplishment. That Free Trade will come some day in the United States it is perfectly safe to assert; but how and when, and other minutiae of the kind, must be left to the Cobden Club and to its twelve Cabinet Ministers in their unofficial capacity to decide."

In 1880 the September election in Maine was unfavorable to the cause of protection, showing that the Cobdenites were making progress. The Irish-Americans became alarmed and in answer to a circular-letter call, issued by Gen. Jas. R. O'Beirne of New York, Hon. John F. Scanlan and Hon. Alexander L. Morrison, of Chicago, and several others, including the writer, met in a national convention at Indianapolis, Indiana, to take suitable measures against the persistent attacks of the British Government against American industry. It was a noted gathering, most of the members being formerly Democrats. It was harmonious and highly beneficial to American industry. It placed an efficient corps of Irish-American orators and writers at the services of the Republican party, in support of Gen. Jas. A. Garfield for president, and completely reversed the Cobden Club work in Maine and destroyed its influence in America.

The defeat of the Cobden Club in 1880 caused the name to be changed to that of Revenue Reform Club in the campaign of 1884, in which they were partially successful by the election of Mr. Cleveland, but with

a Congress still against them. His celebrated wool message, dictated by the Revenue Reformers, caused the general defeat of himself and party in 1888 and gave a large majority in Congress to the friends of the American system, who established our tin plate industry by means of the McKinley tariff. The Revenue Reformers, alias Cobden Club, now turned from the farmer to the mechanics and laborers of the Republic, and with the aid of lying merchants succeeded in convincing them that the McKinley law was a tax on their dinner-buckets. By a change in the labor vote the large Republican majority in Congress gave way in 1890 to a larger Democratic one, which was followed in 1892 by the tidal wave that brought Mr. Cleveland back to the presidency, with majorities in both branches of Congress. The tax on the mechanics' dinner bucket and on the farmers' wool was lowered by the Wilson bill; and its alleged author hied away to the home of the Cobden Club in London, to be feasted and extolled as a wise statesman, while the highways of his own country were crowded with idle men; which cheered all England and caused the London Times to say that the end of the Republic was approaching.

In 1893 the president called Congress together in special session to repeal the Sherman silver act, which he and his Cobden Club friends alleged was the cause of our industrial depression.

To terrorize Congress and the people away from the real criminal, our president, aided by the lecturers and writers of the Cobden Club, hung up the Sherman silver act as a political bugbear; it was an excellent diversion and good enough

bugbear as even Republicans acknowledged its terrors in the platform of 1899 and 1900. And Mr. Bryan, who, in 1893, during a spasm of exultation, carried on his broad shoulders in triumph up and down the aisles of Congress, the author of the Wilson bill, before his departure for the applause and feasts of London, has since, in two campaigns, felt the sting of defeat—U. and R. America.

This brazen attempt to educate Americans in the duties of industrial serfs and to willingly submit to being robbed of their wealth, was made forty-seven years ago, and then, like the Earl Grey movement of today, to supply us with Angloized school readers, found willing tools among Americans. President Woodrow Wilson and Secretary of State, William J. Bryan, were babes at that time, as were many of those now associated with them in executing the will of England instead of the laws of the Republic. We have no means of knowing the colleges and libraries which accepted those free British publications, but the civic policy of the President and his Cabinet, afford us ample reason to believe that the institutions where they were educated, were liberally supplied by the British government.

It required from 1866 to 1892, in the British school of delusion, to induce Americans to step into the Cobden Club industrial trap. In 1892 Grover Cleveland for the second time was elected president on a Cobden Club issue; this time with both branches of Congress to support him. Foreign imports came rolling in and American mechanics and laborers went rolling out of their mills and fac-

tories, into the streets and highways seeking in vain for employment, and forming Kelley and Coxey armies to march on Washington from California and Ohio. In two years the people put the Cobdenites out of buisness in the lower branch of congress. In two years more they put them out of the senate and the presidential chair. Even tho a delusion it received a majority at the polls in 1892, after a full discussion before the people, while in 1912 the Cobdenite disciples slipt into power as a minority.

(From Urban and Rural America).

In 1892 America stood out alone far beyond all other nations, as the wealthiest and most prosperous aggregate of men that then existed, or of which the annals of the world gave any account. They had fully recuperated from the effects of a late civil war in which a million of their citizens had perisht on the field; and more than twice that number returned to their homes scarred and maimed with wounds that deprived them from again entering upon the active vocations of life and forced them to become a burden upon the industry of the nation, that was most cheerfully and generously borne by the citizens. The condition of the country at that time was truly pictured by President Harrison in his last message to Congress, shown by the following extracts:

"In submitting my annual message to Congress, I have great satisfaction in being able to say that the general conditions affecting the commercial and industrial interests of the United States are in the highest degree favorable. A comparison of the

existing conditions with those of the most favored period in the history of the country will, I believe, show that so high a degree of prosperity and so general a diffusion of the comforts of life was never before enjoyed by our people.

"The total wealth of the country in 1860 was \$10,150,010,068. In 1890 it amounted to \$62,610,000,000, an increase of 237 per cent.

"The total mileage of railroads in the United States in 1860 was 30,626; in 1890 it was 167,741, an increase of 448 per cent; and it is estimated that there will be about 4,000 miles of track added by the close of the year 1892.

"The official returns of the eleventh census and those of the tenth census for seventy-five leading cities furnish the basis for the following comparisons:

In 1880 the capital invested in manufacturing was \$1,232,839,070.

In 1890 the capital invested in manufacturing was \$2,900,735,884.

In 1880 the number of employes was 1,301,388.

In 1890 the number of employes was 2,251,134.

In 1880 the wages earned were \$501,905,778.

In 1890 the wages earned were \$1,221,170,454.

In 1880 the value of the product was \$2,711,570,890.

In 1890 the value of the product was \$4,860,286,837.

"I am informed by the superintendent of the census that the omission of certain industries in 1880, which are included in 1890, accounts in part for the remarkable increase shown. But, after mak-

ing full allowance for differences of methods and deducting the returns for all industries not included in the census of 1880, there remains in the reports from these seventy-five cities an increase in the capital employed of \$1,522,745,004, in the value of the products of \$2,024,228,100, in wages earned of \$977,949,929 and in the number of wage-earners employed of 856,020. The wage earnings not only show an increased aggregate, but an increase per capita from \$386 in 1880 to \$547 in 1890, or 41.70 per cent.

"Another indication of the general prosperity of the country is found in the fact that the number of depositors in savings banks increased from 693,870 in 1860, to 4,258,893 in 1890, an increase of 513 per cent, and the amount of deposits from \$149,277,504 in 1860 to \$1,524,844,506 in 1890, an increase of 921 per cent. In 1891 the amount of deposits in saving banks was \$1,623,079,749. It is estimated that 90 per cent of these deposits represented the savings of wage earners.

There never has been a time in our history when work was so abundant or when wages were as high, whether measured by the currency in which they are paid or by their power to supply the necessities and comforts of life.

"I believe the protective system * * * has been a mighty instrument for the development of our national wealth and a most powerful agency in protecting the homes of our workingmen from the invasion of want."

Four years preceding this time, at the end of President Cleveland's first term of office, the sur-

plus revenue of the Nation, over and above current liabilities, was over \$130,000,000, and increasing at the rate of \$11,335,000 a month; coming principally from the pockets of foreign manufacturers for the privilege of placing their goods in our market. Besides this we had \$1,900,000,000 in gold, silver and paper money at par in the United States, of which \$600,000,000 were in the National Treasury; indicating such a condition of national prosperity that its magnitude staggered and bewildered the outgoing administration. Mr. Cleveland and his free trade friends attempted, thru the Mills bill, to engraft their English revenue principles upon the laws of the Republic; but failed for want of a Senate to support them.

The party that called President Harrison to office in 1888 stood upon the following declaration in favor of protection: "We are uncompromisingly in favor of the American system of protection; we protest against its destruction as proposed by the President (Cleveland) and his party. They serve the interest of Euorpe; we will support the interest of America. We accept the issue and confidently appeal to the people for their judgment. The protective system must be maintained. Its abandonment has always been followed by general distaster to all interests except those of the usurer and the sheriff. We denounce the Mills bill as destructive to the general business, the labor and the farming interests of the country; and we heartily indorse the consistant and patriotic action of the Republican representatives in Congress in opposing its passage?"

Upon that issue the Republicans were success-

ful. They elected Harrison and for the first time since 1873 secured a majority in both houses of Congress. They called in the \$130,000,000 surplus which Mr. Cleveland had distributed among favored bankers and applied it to reducing the principal of the national debt. Thomas B. Reed took John G. Carlisle's place as Speaker of the House of Representatives, and Wm. McKinley took the place of R. Q. Mills as Chairman of the Committee on Ways and Means. The tariff and revenue laws were revised by the friends of the American system of protection. Internal revenue taxes were reduced over \$10,000,000 and tariff taxes over \$41,000,000. Duties were removed from everything that we could not produce ourselves; they remained unchanged on 249 articles, were reduced on 190 and increased on only 115 articles scheduled in the McKinley bill in 1890.

While this bill was pending before Congress the Cobden Club revenue reformers drew the darkest pictures of distress and evil that were sure to come to the Republic by its adoption. It was represented by them to our people as the erection of a Chinese wall that would shut off America from the commerce and trade of the world; but the first year of its existence showed an increase in both foreign and domestic trade greater than was ever before known in our history, and drew from the manufacturers of Europe a general protest and also over \$99,000,000 of their gold to pay us for the difference between what we had sold to and what we had bought of them in that year.

The McKinley tariff went into effect only about

three weeks before the Congressional election of 1890. American merchants in many places had fraudulently marked up their goods and charged it to the McKinley law. Labor was everywhere arrayed against capital and the American manufacturer was denounced as a national robber. There was never a time in our history when the English motto, divide and conquer, was so skillfully applied in American politics. The lower house of Congress passed into the hands of revenue reformers amid the approving shouts of the tin-bucket brigades in our great cities, who were promised higher wages, cheaper clothing and dinner buckets.

From the passage of the McKinley tariff till the second election of Mr. Cleveland the American air was kept redolent with the perfume of sweet promises to the laborer and the mechanic of greater wages, with cheaper dinner buckets, coats and blankets. Mr. Cleveland himself, Nov. 13, 1890, at the Columbus, Ohio, banquet joined in swelling the general chorus, saying:

"We are not ashamed to confess ourselves 'in full sympathy with the demand for cheaper coats, and we are not disturbed by the hint that this seems 'necessarily to involve a cheaper man or woman under the coats.' When the promoter of a party measure which invades every home in the land with higher prices declares that cheap and nasty go together, and this whole system of cheap things is a badge of poverty, for cheap merchandise means cheap men, and cheap men mean a cheap country,' we indignantly repudiate such an interpretation of American sentiment. To attend to

reverse the current of true Americanism and discredit the most honorable sentiments belonging to American manhood were the disgraceful tasks of those who insulted our people by the announcement of the doctrine that to desire cheapness was to love nastiness, and to practice economy and frugality was un-American."

Mr. Cleveland quoted Maj. McKinley and indignantly repudiated his sentiments. But after the people had voted for Mr. Cleveland's return to office, with a Congress to support him, it was soon found that the system of cheap things was truly a badge of poverty, not only for the man under the cheap coat, but likewise for his country.

Americans neither fear nor shun competition with the nations of the world in everything that tends to the betterment of humanity, but they do fear and will shun everything that tends to the degredation of man; or which tends to keep him in the grip of poverty and ignorance. The British system that requires the expenditure of \$3.75 per capita to maintain an army for each 62 cents spent in maintaining schools for the education of their people, should find no favor in this country. Civilization will be better served by the American system which requires the expenditure of \$1.35 for schools to each 30 cents that go to the army.

The Aftermath.

Within eight months after his election Mr. Cleveland drew the following dismal picture of distress:

"The existence of an alarming and extraordinary business situation, involving the welfare and prosperity of all our people, has constrained me to call

together in extra session the people's representatives in Congress, to the end that, thru a wise and patriotic exercise of the legislative duty with which they solely are charged, present evils may be mitigated and dangers threatening the future may be averted.

"Our unfortunate financial plight is not the result of untoward events nor of conditions related to our natural resources; nor is it traceable to any of the afflictions which frequently check national growth and prosperity. With plenteous crops, with abundant promise of remunerative invitation to safe investment and with satisfactory assurance to business enterprise, suddenly financial distrust and fear have sprung upon every side. Numerous moneyed institutions have suspended because abundant assets were not immediately available to meet the demands of frightened depositors. Surviving corporations and individuals are content to keep in hand the money they are usually anxious to loan, and those engaged in legitimate business are surprised to find that the securities they offer for loans, tho heretofore satisfactory, are no longer accepted. Values supposed to be fixed are fast becoming conjectural, and loss and failure have invaded every branch of business."

It is less than four years since President Harrison and President Cleveland made their respective word-picture of the condition of our country. Eight months apart, and both truly drawn. What a wonderful change! Are the pictures forgotten? Will we forget them when we go to the polls on the third of November? A majority of the men who declaimed for cheap goods in 1892 are now found

rendering the air with their screams for higher prices. Then it was free silver and dearer goods that are offered to cure all national ills. It was delusion then, it is deception now. The money issue is a fraud.

Thirty years of national prosperity, under the shield of protection, has made that system more than an experiment with our people. It should be maintained with jealous care by the rich and the poor alike. It is, next to our system of general education, the best anchor to hold secure our ship of state in the political storms that may rise from the passions and disappointed ambitions of our politicians.

In December, 1892, there was no question about the soundness of our money system. No man then questioned the disire of the president-elect, Mr. Cleveland, to maintain our paper and silver on a par with gold. Yet that did not save the business of the country, East and West, North and South, from going down with a crash even before he was inaugurated; nor save himself and party the mortification of stating the facts to the world over his own signature within four months after he had taken his seat as president, in a speical message calling Congress together, not by reason of the prosperity promist before his election on a platform for revenue only under the lead of the Cobden Club and its twelve British Ministers, but because, as stated in the message, sudden financial distrust and fear have sprung up on every side. Values supposed to be fixed are fast becoming conjectured, and loss and failure have invaded every branch of business." And

he might have truthfully added, that a million of his countrymen who had been profitably employed on the day of his election were then out on the public highways seeking in vain for employment, while the shops and factories of Europe were busily engaged preparing goods for our markets under a tariff schedule drawn by the agents of the Cobden Club, which subsequently became known as the Wilson bill. Limited employment for labor and capital and a bankrupt treasury were the portions awarded America by the Cobden Club friends of Mr. Cleveland since the vote of 1892.

The people fully understood the true cause of their misfortunes when they went to the ballot-box in 1894 and sent Mr. Wilson, Mr. Bryan and those who acted with them into merited retirement from Congress. And had Mr. Cleveland been within reach of their votes he would have gone with all the others. In many of the states solid delegations were returned to Congress pledged to undo the evils of the Wilson bill. We were not surprised, therefore, to find Mr. Cleveland and those who had been condemned by the sweeping vote of 1894, seeking for some cover under which they could retire from the responsibility of causing the general ruin of their country's business, by a partial application of a system that would reduce the high standard of American labor to the low degrading level of Europe and Asia; but we were astonished to see how readily the friends of protection allowed them to run away from such responsibility under cover of a free silver cloak, instead of tearing away the false

covering and exposing their deformity to the people as was done 1894.

After the vote of 1892 was declared American mills and factories stopt and banks commenct to suspend. Hundreds of thousands of laboring men were either thrown entirely out of employment or had their hours of labor and pay reduced. No man felt safe in doing business or knew what the future had in store for him. Curtailment and retrenchment were everywhere the orders of the day. The only increase or expansion that was noticeable was found in the number of idle men which were crowding the highways; and the number of free soup-houses to keep them from starving. This condition continued until after the condemnation vote of 1894 drove the destruction breeders from Congress, which gave business men assurance that the great American people could be trusted to right the wrongs of shallow politicians in 1896.

Since the vote of this year was announct showing the election of Major McKinley anxiety has been transferred from the business men and manufacturers of America to those of Europe. Increase and expansion are now the orders in America while curtailment and doubt reign in the shops and factories of Europe. We do not rejoice over the misfortunes of other nations; but are gratified to find relief from the distress that has been bearing so heavily upon our own. We have been for years furnishing homes to the opprest millions of other nations, and to not a few of their paupers, imbeciles and criminals. Wisdom tells us it is time to close our doors against the latter classes, while we con-

ture to welcome such of the former class as are moral and intelligent.

The fatherhood of God and the brotherhood of man do not require us to degrade ourselves to the low level of those in Europe who can only be held in the line of rational duty to each other, as citizens, by the swords and bayonets of large armies. Our degradation as a people would only sink those of Europe to a lower plane than they now occupy, while our continued success will be, in the future as in the past, a stimulus to them to reach out for a higher standard of human government and a truer civilization; such as will bring them up to a level with American freedom, where all may truly claim a fraternal fellowship under the fatherhood of God and the law of equality and justice.

Growth of the American System.

Washington, Hamilton and the federalists generally favored a tariff for protection. Jefferson and Madison, the organizers and leaders of the old republicans, favored the principles of protection. The first democratic national convention held in America, by the friends of Andrew Jackson, declared in favor of protection, and the republican convention that nominated Lincoln approved the system. It was declared, by the great Clay and that superlative statesman, James G. Blaine, to be the true American system of taxation. It was abandoned in the interest of sectionalism by the men who brought on the rebellion. It was next taken up as a war measure by Justin S. Morrill, of Vermont, and William D. Kelley, of Pennsylvania; but the full benefit of the system was neutered

by the counter internal revenue system which prevailed during and for many years subsequent to the war. Each reduction in the internal revenue taxes strengthened the protection afforded to our industry by the Morrill tariff of 1861. There were many crude provisions in the Morrill schedules that could not be corrected without endangering the whole system, because of the bitter opposition of many leading members of Congress, both republican and democratic, encouraged by the false coloring given to the official reports of David A. Wells, the Commissioner of Internal Revenue, who visited England just after the formation of the Cobden Club and returned with his opinions entirely changed from being a friend of the American system to that of its bitterest enemy. A position maintained by him at the present time as the leading American member of that club; the one whom we believe framed the Wilson bill for Mr. Cleveland before the meeting of Congress in 1893. And who took a leading part in framing the gold issue for democracy, as a blind to cover the evils growing out of their former work.

During the many years of Wm. D. Kelley's leadership as a protectionist the colored statements of Mr. Wells constantly annoyed him. They were sent broadcast thru the farming communities of the West, and had such influence upon their members of Congress that they refused to send Mr. Kelley's speeches to their constituents even in Illinois, as shown by the following letter to us from Mr. Kelley:

Washington, D. C., April 24, 1870.

Michael Piggott, Quincy, Ill.

Dear Sir:—I send you herewith a copy of my speech of March 25th, address to the farmers of the West, and beg you to consider it and to let me know how many copies I may send you for distribution. The Illinois delegation, dissenting from my views, will not send it into your state, and if I wish to be heard by the farmers of Illinois, I must appeal to private agencies. I will send copies under my frank to any number of people whose address you will furnish me.

Yours very truly,

WM. D. KELLEY.

Since the date of this letter the American system has enabled the Nation to pay off more than two-thirds of its great war debt, and allowed all branches of business to prosper till checkt by the vote of 1892 favoring the British system.

Maj. McKinley succeeded Mr. Kelley as the leading advocate and defender of the American system in and out of Congress. Under his skillful leadership this system was brought to its greatest perfection by the bill that bore his name in 1890. When the Cobden Club vote of 1892 sent a whirlwind of distress sweeping over every line of business in the country, leaving industrial ruin and dismay in its wake, everywhere the eyes of the people turned imploringly to Maj. McKinley, the champion of protection, for relief, and refused to be satisfied till his nomination and election were secured.

While in 1870 no republican congressmen from Illinois could be found to distribute protection speeches among their constituents, every one elected to the next Congress is favorable to that system.

At the Danger Line.

The victory at the polls was a sweeping one, but the danger line has not been crost; it lies just in front of us, and its successful crossing will depend on the action of the new Congress. There must be no halting on the revision of the tariff. The advalorem evils of the Wilson bill must disappear. The interests of the American farmer, mechanic and laborer must have precedence over those of Europe. They are the wealth producers, and the Nation's defenders in times of danger.

The people must not go to sleep now on their rights. Our large cities are crowded with the agents of foreign shops and factories who will attempt to hold our markets. The Cobden Club, with its corps of sixteen editorial writers, and holding contracts with more than one thousand newspapers to publish their productions, will be more active than ever in deluding our people with false promises and pictures of evil.

When Mr. Wells was commissioner of internal revenue the manufacturers of Sheffield, England, kindly prepared a **tariff schedule** for him, which was submitted to Congress and exposed by Wm. D. Kelley of Philadelphia. It was admitted by Mr. Hooper of Boston, in the house of representatives at Washington, while in charge of the "coinage act" of 1873, since known as the "silver demonetiz-

ing act," that the discordant measure was prepared by Earnest Seyd of London.

The Silver Fraud.

For more than twelve years the business of the Nation was done with paper money. Neither gold nor silver circulated among the people. The Act of 1873 stands alone as the colossal fraud of the nineteenth century. Stolen from the people by Ernst Seyd, of London, an agent of our foreign bondholders, who manipulated the law at the time the revenue clubs were forming and for the same purpose: to rob America of its wealth. When the silver bill was before Congress, April 5, 1872, Mr. Hooper, member of the Committee on Coinage, Weights, and Measures, who had charge of the measure, said that the bill had been prepared two years before; that it had the sanction of the Secretary of the Treasury and of Ernst Seyd, of London, a distinguisht bullionist, then in Washington, who did not take credit to themselves for the original preparation of the bill, tho they unanimously recommended its passage as necessary and expedient. The records do not show where or by whom the bill was prepared, but it is fair to presume Mr. Seyd was its author. It was prepared two years before and did not become a law till February 12, 1873. Mr. Hopper, in answer to a question from Mr. Holman, of Indiana, silenct Congress by saying his bill made no changes in the minor coinage laws. That Congress, and even President Grant, who approved the bill, did not know that silver was demonetized, is shown by subsequent statements of the President and leading members of both houses

of Congress. Eight months after signing the bill, Grant said: "I confess to a desire to see a limited hoarding of money. But I want to see a hoarding of something that is a standard of value the world over. Silver is this." Senator Allison said: "The House of Representatives intended to coin both gold and silver, and intended to place both metals upon the French relation instead of our own, which was the true scientific position in reference to this question in 1873; but that the bill was afterwards 'doctored,' by substituting the trade dollar of 420 grains for the standard dollar of 412½ grains, and failed to provide for coining the latter. Judge Kelly said: "Tho chairman of the Committee on Coinage, I was ignorant of the fact that it would demonetize the silver dollar, or of its dropping the silver dollars from our system of coins." Senator Beck said: "It never was understood by either house of Congress. I say that with full knowledge of the facts." Mr. Blaine, who presided at the time it past the House of Representatives, said he did not know its purpose. Joseph Cannon said the bill was not discust, "and neither members of Congress nor the people understood the scope of the measure." Senator Morgan said: "Did the people demonetize silver? Never! It cannot even be fairly said that Congress did it. It was done in a corner darkly. It was done at the instigation of the bondholders and other money kings, who now with upturned eyes deplore the wickedness we exhibit in asking the question even, who did the great wrong against the toiling millions of our people?" Senator Voorhees said: "When the twelfth day of February,

1873, approacht the day of doom to the American dollar, the dollar of our fathers, how silent was the work of the enemy! Not a sound, not a word, or note of warning to the American people that their favorite coin was about to be destroyed as money; that the greatest financial revolution of modern times was in contemplation and about to be accomlisht against their highest and dearest rights! Never since the foundation of the government has a law of such vital and tremendous importance, or, indeed, of any importance at all, crawled into our statute books so furtively and noiselessly as this. Its enactment there was as completely unknown to the people and, indeed, to four-fifths of Congress itself, as the presence of a burglar in a house at midnight to its sleeping inmates. This was rendered possible partly because the clandestine movement was so utterly unexpected and partly from the nature of the bill in which it occurred."

Republic vs. Empire.

In 1870 Prof. Kirk, in Social Politics, said: "There are about 70,000 souls in the east end of London whò must emigrate speedily or die. They are being shipt off as fast as charity and government can transport them to North America." * * * "In the vast hives of industry in Lancashire there are a greater number who must emigrate or die. These are getting off as fast as they possibly can to Massachusetts to find full occupation in cotton. * * * It is important, too, to notice that by far the largest number of our emigrants to America go to the United States. In 1866 those to the 'colonies' were 13,255, while to the States they

reached the high number of 161,000. It is, therefore, very clear that it is with America we have specially to do in considering the bearings of this vast and growing emigration. * * * An emigration from Britain to these states is not a going forth to subdue the wilds of the earth's surface, but to increase the population of large manufacturing centers."

Why did those emigrants come to the Republic of Washington instead of going to Canada, New Zeland, Australia, India, Africa or other of the British colonies; where Cobden's political economy dominated, and where their citizenship might be maintained under a native flag?

It was because the American Republic had recently shown to the whole world the inherent power of intelligent freemen under just and equal laws made and executed by themselves, or by their servants. It was because in the crucible of civil war the patriotism of its citizens stood the severest test that had ever been applied to the strength of government. It was because the nations of the earth with amazement saw more than a million volunteers rushing to arms from fields and factories in defense of freedom and humanity; forming an invincible army that was gentle and obedient in camp; just and patient on the march; brave and enduring in battle, and generous and forgiving in victory. Prompt in laying down as in taking up arms. When their work was done in the field of war they cheerfully returned as citizens to their fields and workshops of industry, where the same intelligence that saved the Republic in the contest of arms has gained in-

dustrial victories, more renowned than any ever before won by the nations of the earth.

From the ranks of that volunteer army the Republic has seven times chosen its Executive Officer. From there came also the men of civic wisdom who in the press, on the political rostrum and in the halls of Congress successfully contested and exposed the sophistries of the Cobden Club, and permanently placed in our legislative archives the American system of civic economy to stimulate and protect the industry of the farmer and the artisan. By means of which the Republic has given remunerative employment to its own poor, and took from the nations of Europe nearly fifteen millions of their people, including those 150,000 whom Prof. Kirk says were starving in London and Lancashire in 1870 and gave them constant employment and more cheerful homes than are enjoyed by those who toil in any other nation.—U. R. A.

Trade With American Republics.

While American commercialism has its face towards Asia looking for trade, it is neglecting trade that is closer and safer in the republics of Central and South America. There is no reason why the South American Republics should continue to sell their exports to the United States and buy their imports from Europe, as they are doing. If the American people will drop their magpie nonsense of repeating what England has to say about the superiority of her so-called Anglo-Saxon race and the decadence and inferiority of the Latin race, they will find an open and wider road to the trade of the sister republics than they will find by in-

sulting a naturally proud and extremely sensitive people.

Most of the South American republics have increased many fold their populations since they gained their independence from Spain, and all hold vast unoccupied spaces that must in the near future draw immigration and contribute to their national wealth. At present few of the Republics have sufficient labor to till the soil or start manufactures.

The free institutions of our Republic have been during the last century drawing the bulk of the emigration from Europe, but now our clamor for foreign labor is ended and our lands are virtually occupied. The most inviting field now for immigrants is offered by the South American republics and that field will soon be occupied by hordes of people from over-crowded Europe who should become our friends as representatives of republican government; and will if our statesmen have the wisdom to lay now the foundation for better commercial relations, and silence the English echo of a dying Latin race—U and R America.

CHAPTER XXI.

THE LION PLAYING LAMB.

During the American Civil War, when it was expected that our republic would fail, Lord Salisbury told the world why England and America could not be friends, in the following words: "England and the northern states of America can never be true friends, for the simple reason, not merely because the newspapers write at each other, or that there are prejudices on both sides, but because we are rivals; rivals politically, rivals commercially. We both aspire to the government of the seas. We are both manufacturing people, in every port, as in every court, we are rivals to each other."

Mr. Seward, the American Secretary of State, in writing Mr. Adams, the American Minister in London, at the time Lord Salisbury gave his frank statement to the world, said: "It was manifest in the speeches and general tenor of popular discussions that neither the responsible ministers, nor the House of Commons, nor the people of Great Britain sympathized with the American Government and hoped, or even wisht for success; but on the contrary, the whole British nation desired and expected the fall of the republic." Again in 1863: He "perceived that the English press, with unanimity, had at last confest that the sympathy and good wishes of the nation were with the insurgents and hoped for the failure of the union." Again, December 5, 1864: The desolation and devastation which the Civil War, pro-

moted and protracted by British subjects, has spread thruout states which before were eminently prosperous and happy.' And Mr. Adams, replying, said: England confidently hoped that the "Great Snake" (the republic) would be cut in halves and then in smaller pieces, so that it would never afterwards be dangerous.

So long as England acted the part of an open enemy, America was in but little danger from her wily clubs, associations and leagues; but when she changed her system of attack in 1898, from open enmity to simulated friendship, she laid a foundation for grave dangers to the life of the American republic. When the Spanish-American War commenct, British naval officers freely predicted the defeat of the American navy, because that was the wish of the British people. The British Ambassador at Washington, Lord Pauncefote, while professing friendship for his "kindred race" in America, proposed to other diplomats to unite Europe in a league against America. A perfidy both checkt and exposed by the German Ambassador.

Just ten days after the signal destruction of the last Spanish fleet by America, while Lord Salisbury was Premier of England, Pauncefote, Ambassador at Washington, and John Hay, American Ambassador at London; Cecil Rhodes and Joseph Chamberlain in consultation with the Prince of Wales later Edward VII., on plans for the destruction of the Boer republic, the British government, inspired by Rhodes and Chamberlain, made a new tack in dealing with America.

This new tack is the most perfidious of all that

England has made against America, because it attempts to cover the enmity of one hundred and twenty-two years with a cloak of friendship, in order to gain a closer position to strike at the heart of the Republic by a reunion with England.

To accomplish this reunion the American Republic must be undermined and destroyed. To this end all the ill-gotten wealth secured by Cecil Rhodes in Africa has been devoted by the provisions of his will, in the drafting of which W. T. Stead says he aided; both having from youth, held views in common on the subject. The principal means adopted, and provided for in Rhodes' will, is the education of American youths at Oxford, England, in British methods and in touch with the sons of privilege. One student from each state and territory are selected annually. Each scholarship has a yearly value of \$1,500, and tenable for three years. They are offered at Oxford, to enable the students "to meet Englishmen, to work with them, to know them and be known by them, to get the English point of view, the Oxford point of view, that Anglo-Saxon might know Anglo-Saxon.

The London dispatches of December 24, 1906, told us that Mr. Bryce hastened to Washington to arrange for a joint policy, at the meeting of the Hague in May by England, France and America. There has not been an inter-national question raised, since the Anglo-American League was organized, that England did not dictate the policy of America, by announcing it in advance from London, as if we were already a subject nation.

It was so in the open-door question, in the

Boer War, in the Russo-Japan War, on the Morocco question, and now in the Congo matter and the meeting of the Hague.

The London dispatches also told us that Mr. Bryce is expected to break the friendship existing between President Roosevelt and the German Ambassador at Washington.

In the *American Monthly Review of Reviews* of February, 1907, Mr. Stead had an article, preparing the mental field of America for the seed which is expected to be garnered by Mr. Bryce, in which he says: "When Cecil Rhodes indulged in day dreams of things that might have been but for the fatal folly of the German George, he used to say that if the unity of the English-speaking race had not been broken up, the federal parliament of the race would have met alternately, five years at Washington and five years at London." He then tells us that to eliminate that mischief Edward VII sends James Bryce to America, not as a diplomat, but as a statesman of cabinet rank, to represent the unity of the English-speaking race. That Americans are not foreigners, but kinsmen, to be dealt with in the future, not thru the ordinary channels of ambassadors, but thru the intermediary of a cabinet minister and privy counsellor. That to inaugurate such a departure no better choice than that of Mr. Bryce could have been made. That its significance is recognized at Berlin, Paris and St. Petersburg as favoring international peace. That the one great permanent obstacle between a frank and friendly understanding between the empire and the republic, has been the natural, but deplorable, animosity felt

by the sons of the Irish race toward the state which to them is the embodiment of foreign conquest. That every British Ambassador hitherto appointed to Washington, has been regarded by the Irish in America as an emissary of a hostile power. They grudged his success, they thwarted his policy, and they would have regarded themselves as lacking in the true spirit of Irish patriotism if they did not do everything, whenever, wherever and however they could, to counteract his efforts for the promotion of Anglo-American fraternity.

He then says: We have every reason to hope that the appointment of Mr. Bryce will mark the end of this unhappy estrangement; that he is a home ruler, and the son of an Irish mother, born in Ireland. That among liberal statesmen, Mr. Bryce is the most pronounced in favor of a colonial empire. That he visited South Africa just before the Jameson raid, and did his utmost in his book, "Impressions of South Africa," to awaken and enlighten the public at home as to the value of our South African dominions."

It is to be hoped that Mr. Bryce's visit to our Republic will not leave behind it the destruction which followed his visit to South Africa. The American jewel, cut from the crown of George III, by the sword of George Washington, is much more valuable to England than the diamonds and gold of South Africa. We are not surprised to see Edward VII. send his smoothest man to recover its possession; but we will be surprised if his Irish-blarney wins Americans of Irish blood from their allegiance to a Republic that has sheltered their

race from the despotism of England. Many angels, no doubt, have been born in Ireland, and James Bryce may be one with gilded wings disguised by the togger of a British ambassador, but "the sons of the Irish race" will regard him as representing the embodiment of a foreign power, that never did a friendly act, nor thot an honest, friendly sentiment for America, or for the Irish race.

A British Farewell.

The Anglo-American league and the Pilgrim club, of London, united in giving a farewell dinner to James Bryce on the evening of February 6, 1907. Among the guests, as at the organization of the Anglo-American league of 1898, were prominent members of the government and of both houses of parliament, representatives of the army and navy, heads of churches and universities, the mayors of cities, men of letters and of business, to bid Mr. Bryce a Godspeed in the work that is expected from his diplomacy in America.

The man of the evening was not Mr. Bryce, but the American snob, Whitelaw Reid, who, in proposing the health of Mr. Bryce, said: The United States and Great Britain are two sister powers, with the same blood, the same language, the same ideals, the same ambition, and both working to a common end; for which he was cheered to the echo. Referring to the pride with which the countrymen of Mr. Bryce saw him set forth on his new duties, he said: That the good will of the hour will not create any illusions as to the nature of those duties. That Mr. Bryce knows perfectly, none better, that he is sent, first, to look scrupulously

after the interest of his own country; but next he knows that those interests in his country, as in ours, are best promoted by keeping the peace. There has never been a time when the two peoples were so glad to be friends, or when they looked with such impatience on the idea of permitting anything to prevent it.

Mr. Bryce said: That he sometimes wondered if, whether in going to the western hemisphere, he was not going to another and better world. He thanked the American ambassador for the good auguries with which he cheered him on in undertaking a new and responsible task. The United States has grown so great it needs no longer to be self-assertive, as a century ago. Having become the largest and wealthiest among civilized communities, it is respected everywhere and knows it. That England was proud of having such a child as America, and the Americans are proud that the earlier achievements of Great Britain, in which they shared, have been sustained since the separation. This is the sentiment of pride and brotherhood that the English envoy is required to represent in the United States. Never has the spirit of peace been more conspicuously the ruling spirit of both peoples."

It is remarkable how meekly England is always following her spirit of peace. We presume it was that spirit, and not her other spirit, burning with a desire for land and diamonds, that sent James Bryce to South Africa, just before the Jameson Raid, to do his utmost in awakening and enlightening the British angels of peace at home as to the

value of their South African dominions; and enabled England to cover that country with the blood of the Boers; and herself, her army, and her civilization with eternal disgrace. Is it that, or the other spirit, that keeps her in India, and sent her warships with the opium trade to China? Was it that, or the other spirit, that fanned into a blaze the war spirits of Japan and Russia, and is now building seven dreadnaughts to be added to her own overgrown navy? Is it her spirit of peace that keeps her London factory of mendacity, and its branches thruout the world, all busy creating strife among the nations, especially Germany and America, and sends Mr. Bryce to Washington, with instructions to break the friendship existing between President Roosevelt and the German ambassador? Was it the spirit of peace that caused Mr. Bryce lately to advise America not to increase her navy, while, as a cabinet minister and a member of the privy council, he granted the funds to Edward VII to build those dreadnaughts?

Was it that spirit that inspired Cecil Rhodes, in 1898, to organize the Anglo-American league, with James Bryce as president, and, in 1899, to advise America to hold the Philippines and go on in her work of conquest until she controlled all the American hemisphere, except Canada? And induced himself to leave all his wealth to educate American youths at Oxford to betray their country and erect on the runis of the Republic an English-speaking empire?"

The American Commonwealth.

The friends of Mr. Bryce claim much credit for him as being the author of "The American Common-

wealth;" as being fair to America; much fairer than any other English writer has been. Yet he tells the world that Americans have no theory of their state; that its dignity has vanished; that it is less than the individual who lives under it; that the State is but a name for the legislative and administrative machinery, whereby certain business of the inhabitants is dispatched; that it has no more conscience, nor moral mission, or title of awe and respect, than a commercial company working a railroad or a mine. Such is the opinion of the American government held by the fairest of English writers. Matthew Arnold, another of the fair Englishmen, says that America is filled with an unredeemed and irredeemable middle class. While this was not set down to the credit of America, no higher nor more hopeful compliment could be paid to our future. The hope of the world is in the hands of its middle class. The "London Times," the mouth of the British government, in an editorial in 1876, said: "We can not congratulate ourselves that so corrupt a government as that of the United States exists upon the earth." In the eyes of English writers, Americans are merely a body composed of the middle class, with neither a conscience, nor a moral mission, nor awe or respect for their system of government no more than for a commercial company working a railroad or a mine. No lower estimate could be given of a people in a civilized government. But what can Americans expect from men who find merit only in basely fawning before kings, queens and so-called nobles? Before 1776 America had taken from England the best of her people, and in

1783 unloaded her own scrubs, as Tories, on England. The most patriotic men and women in the world are those of America with combined Celtic and Teutonic blood. The "hyfenated Americans" who are standing for the honor of the Republic against English schemes to involve us as her aids in the war of 1914 which promises to knell her doom; they are the brightest, mentally and morally the purest. We believe that the expressions of the "London Times," and of Bryce, and of Arnold, in 1876, the year that Americans were everywhere celebrating the first centennial of their independence from British despotism represented the honest sentiment of the English people, because they were in line with those which English writers had been expressing about Americans for a hundred years. But we cannot believe that those exprest by Mr. Bryce at the Pilgrim Dinner in London on February 6, 1907, were honest, because they contradicted a well establisht record of British ill-will and jealousy.—U. and R. America.

Mining and Sapping.

In August, 1898, the Anglo-American league promptly entered upon its work of deluding American statesmen. John Hay was transferred from London to Washington as the greatest diplomat of the age, to be the American Secretary of State, close to the ear of Lord Paucefote, the British ambassador. Lord Beresford soon followed Mr. Hay, not direct, but by way of India, China and Japan, requiring from September, 1898, to January to lay his diplomatic pipes in China and Japan, reaching Washington February 16, 1899, where he

delivered the British open door policy to the keeping of Mr. Hay, as purely an American enterprise. He also left instructions to watch Germany, France and Russia, and when it might become necessary for England and America to say STAND BACK. It was Beresford who first suggested that the words "friendly understanding" be used instead of "alliance," which smacks too much of treaty ties, and hoped he would eventually see closer ties between the two Anglo-Saxon nations.

Cecil Rhodes, from board of a Hapsburg steamer on the Mediterranean while returning to his work of destruction in Africa, on March 2, 1899, advised America, thru the Associated Press, to hold the Phillipines, and go on in her work of conquest until she controlled all the American hemisphere, except Canada. And not to fear other powers while England and America stood together and maintained their present understanding, which was practically an alliance that no foreign powers would dare menace.

Immediately after Whitelaw Reid organized the New York branch of the league, he was selected as the American Peace Commissioner to Paris, where, following Rhodes' advice, he turned America from the ideals of Washington to those of George III. About the same time Lyman Abbott, second to Reid on the New York list of members, was reported in the press as saying that the political maxims of Washington and our early patriots had lost their meaning; that the Republic had outgrown the ideals of 1776, which were glittering generalities long since abandoned by thotful men as relics of an exploded

philosophy, unworthy of reverence. It was the principles of the league that sent Mr. Hay's son as a pro-British consul to the Boer Republics, and caused Whitelaw Reid, in the name of America, to congratulate England on her first victory over the Boers; and for his wife to lead the women of New York in equipping the hospital ship *Maine* for British use against the Boers, and then donate it to the admiralty of England. It was to promote league work that British officers, in 1906, met with American snobs at Pilgrim dinners in London, New York and Ottawa, to say to other nations, undisputed, as Earl Grey did, that England and America are now linked together as joint trustees of an Anglo-Saxon civilization, traveling hand in hand and shoulder to shoulder in the development and attainment of common ideals. Wilford Laurier, premier of Canada, was in line with the work when he said in Ottawa, at a dinner given to Andrew Carnegie, that it was more than a misfortune, it was a crime, that there was a separation between the British mother-country and her first American colonies, now the United States. That he had always hoped for the time of a reunion; how it would come he did not know, but come it would, he was sure. And Mr. Carnegie was in line when replying he declared himself a race-imperialist, and suggested the mode of reunion by annexing the United States to Canada; then with their revered mother-land, become once more a great nation, as they were before.

During the feasting, drinking and gushing of the simulating friends in America and Canada, their co-

workers in England were not idle. The following, evidently by Mr. Stead, appeared in the London magazine, "Truth:" "Twenty years ago the English hated everything American. We now think altogether differently. The American woman is the pattern upon which our women are being re-modeled; the American man has wholly altered our character and that of our business. British institutions are being reconstructed in accordance with those of the United States." It would be difficult to concentrate more falsehood in as few words, with a single grain of truth: that England hated everything American twenty years ago. We have the evidence of Bishop Potter and of late events in Jamaica that the old hatred still exists, and that there never was a real act of friendship entertained by England for America, and never can be. Our civic systems antagonize in all departments. Neither country can adopt the civic system of the other without destroying its own.

British Mendacity.

When turning America in 1898, at what England called the "Parting of the Ways," English diplomats filled the American press with all sorts of lying reports about what other nations were going to do in America. A press dispatch was placed on the wires at San Francisco, Feb. 27, 1899, while the Paris Treaty of Peace was before congress, telling Americans that Germany recognized the fact that the only hope of continental Europe lay in striking one determined blow that would forever discourage the expansion policy of America, and that the fleets of Germany, Russia and France were then preparing

to take possession of the Philippines. This was mental food prepared by British diplomats for the American mind, the kind for which the firm of Hay, Reid and Abbott hungered and assimilated. It was afterwards shown by the German Ambassador, at Washington, that the substance of this dispatch was in the British proposal of Lord Pauncefote to unite Europe in a league against America. The exposure killed the British Ambassador, but not the system of mendacity behind him in London, because England acts on the idea that America forgets today what happened yesterday.

In November, 1902, the London press cautioned America against the dangers of its German element. That it was liable at some near day to make itself felt in opposition to the Monroe Doctrine in the interest of Germany. The Spectator told us that the German government had instructed its ambassador at Washington to assume charge of the German-American press, and make the Staats Zeitung, of New York, his official organ in cultivating anti-American sentiments. But naively suggested that America was quite able to look after itself without any prompting. That President Roosevelt and the able statesmen in his cabinet, Mr. Hay and Mr. Root, have taken the measure of the Kaiser and the German policy generally. The London Times told us not to blind ourselves to the serious menace which this German movement, to create in our midst a formidable alien factor, drawing inspiration from abroad, offers to the future domestic peace of the Republic. That the visit of Prince Henry and the gift of the statue of Frederick the Great, to be

erected in Washington, were for the purpose of consolidating sentiments, which will unite German-Americans with the political, social and material interests of their father-land, and hold America as an intellectual province of the German Empire, and that some day when a difference may arise on the practical application of the Monroe Doctrine, the German-American vote may turn the scale and decide the policy of the Republic.

Among true Americans there never was any doubt about the friendship and continued good will of Germany and its people for America. Contrast the statements of Mr. Seward and Minister Adams, heretofore referred to as to the general enmity of England and its people during our Civil War, with the following correspondence between Secretary Seward and Norman B. Judd, our minister at Berlin, as to the sentiment in Germany. Mr. Judd said: There is no doubt of the friendly feelings of the Prussian government towards the government of the United States and its desire that the rebellion should be subdued. Mr. Seward replying, said: The king and people of Prussia have dealt with us in good faith and great friendship during the severe trials thru which we have been passing. And, referring to Baron Von Gerolt, the Prussian Minister at Washington, said: He has been a firm, frank and hopeful friend of this government and country. When the war was over, April 27, 1865, all the members of the Prussian House of Deputies, over two hundred and sixty in number, united in an address to Minister Judd, in which, among other things, they said: "Sir, living among us you are a

witness to the heartfelt sympathy which this people have ever preserved for the people of the United States during this long and severe conflict. You are aware that Germany has looked with pride and joy on the thousands of her sons who in this struggle have placed themselves on the side of law and right. You have seen with what joy the victories of the union have been hailed, and how confident our faith in the final triumph of the great cause of the restoration of the union in all its greatness has ever been, even in the midst of adversity."

Again after the Spanish-American War, when England attempted to shift from her own shoulders to those of Germany, the infamy of her efforts to unite Europe in a league against America, our ambassador at Berlin, Andrew D. White, at a farewell banquet, said: "During the life and death struggle of the American union, Germany was the nation, which thruout all classes of society, took the side of the Union. Everywhere else in Europe hostile feelings were exprest and malignant prophecies were made. Germany understood the deep meaning of the contest and gave its aid thru sympathy with the union."—U. R. A.

In 1915, the American Republic has in its schools, more than twenty-five millions of its youths, ranging in age from five to eighteen years, at the threshold of their primary schools, all were given books labled "English" instead of "American," generally with some history applauding British aggression in India, China and Africa, as civilizing enterprises. Then in spite of our American Smelting-Pot, we wonder why an American school-book pub-

lisher, serving as ambassador to England, should so forget the honor and prestige of his country, as to say to British lords and flunkies that, "in spite of the great fusion of races, and the great contributions which other nations have made to our one hundred millions of people and our incalculable wealth, we are yet English led and English ruled, and happy in building the Panama Canal and lowering our tariff to please them."

There are far reaching objects with more enmity than love in the late manifestations of British friendship for America, their end will be like the traditional love of the wolf for the lamb, unless the American lamb, in the future as in the past, prove wiser than the British wolf.

In July, 1904, we learned from a series of papers by William T. Stead in the Saturday Evening Post, that Lord Milnor, who assisted England in the destruction of the Boer Republics "was not an Englishman, but a German—a son of a professor at the Stuttgart University, where only Germans are eligible to teach, and of an Irish lady whom he married in Germany, where their son was born, registered and christened, and where he received his early schooling in the German language, but later was sent to Oxford, England, to complete his education, where he drank in at every pore, its subtle influence." May we not infer that the Oxford influence on Alfred Milnor, gave Cecil Rhodes the impulse to devote his wealth to complete at Oxford the education of advanced students from American Universities in a three year's finishing course among the sons of privilege, hoping

to send them back as British aids in establishing an English-speaking Empire on the ruins of the American Republic.

We have now, several of those Oxfordized Americans in our schools and diplomatic service betraying their country and giving the British spirit of conquest to all matters within their influence. They are the nucleus around which the English-Speaking Imperialists and New England pilgrims are rallying for a reunion with the British Empire; and can be defeated only by the united action of American-Speaking men and women, imbued with the spirit of 1776.

The Record-Herald of October 10, 1905, told us that the following Cecil Rhodes graduates of Oxford are now in the faculties of American colleges:

R. T. Scholz of Wisconsin at the University of California.

E. W. Murray of Kansas at University of Kansas.

J. A. Brown of New Hampshire and Paul Nixon of Connecticut at Dartmouth.

F. H. Forbes of Massachusetts at Harvard.

R. L. Henry of Illinois, University of Louisiana.

R. P. Brooks of Georgia, University of Georgia.

Neil Carothers of Arkansas, University of Arkansas.

J. M. Johanson, Washington and H. B. Denmore, Oregon, University of Washington.

S. R. Ashby, Texas, University of Texas.

F. Aydelotte, Indiana, University of Indiana.

C. D. Mahaffie, Oklahoma, Princeton.

R. K. Hack, Massachusetts, Williams.

S. E. Elliot, Missouri, University of Oregon.

S. C. Tucker-Brooke, West Virginia, Cornell.

Fellowships in American colleges are held by the following Rhodes scholars who graduated from Oxford.

H. Hinds of North Dakota and C. F. Foster of Idaho at the University of Chicago; S. K. Hornbeck of Colorado, B. B. Wallace of Minnesota, B. E. Schmitt of Tennessee and H. H. Holt of Vermont at the University of Wisconsin; T. B. Bell of New Mexico at Columbia University, New York."

More than one hundred and ninety have returned since 1908. Where are they now? Are they with Page in London and with Bryan in Washington assisting in ruling America to please Sir Edward Grey and George V, aiding the one hundred and twenty-five other British subjects in our Consular and Diplomatic Service? Or have they been assigned to the American press to abuse German-Americans as hyfenated citizens?

CHAPTER XXII.

THE ANGLO-AMERICAN LEAGUE.

The American Republic is the marvel of the world: from its cradle in 1776 to the end of the Spanish war it has been a giant among the nations of the earth. Its beneficent example in placing all on an equality before the law, and its ways of peace, industry and education have elevated the world's standard of civilization. It has encouraged humanity everywhere to struggle for recognition in the civic affairs of men. The grand maxims given to the world in its Declaration of Independence from the despotism of George III have drawn from the best tribes of the earth twenty millions of liberty loving and enterprising people who assimilated with those of the early patriots and now dominate the western hemisphere from the Atlantic to the Pacific, and from the lakes of the north to the Caribbean Sea. A vast continent which 125 years ago, excepting a narrow strip sparsely settled on the Atlantic, was overrun by ferocious beasts and savage tribes of men, but now redeemed by a new civilization and occupied by great prosperous cities, beehives of industry in the garden of the world, the Eden and refuge of humanity, guarded by a new vigorous race which history will glorify as American.

It required seven years of war to write in the history of the world the political maxims which removed from the British Crown its brightest jewel—America—and dedicate a continent, disenthralled and purified, to the services of humanity,

as its only shrine of freedom under a higher and broader civilization. The recovery of this lost jewel and destruction of this shrine have been a burning desire on the British political altar from the peace of 1783 to the present moment. It often burns into a flame, then subsides to an ember, but never goes entirely out. During the "Open Door" days of the old Confederacy it burned brightly while destroying the industry, commerce and harmony of the young states. It blazed into a roar in the war of 1812 and illumined the world's seas with our burning commerce in 1861-5. It warmed and stimulated the purpose of the Cobden Club in its vicious onslaught on our industry from 1866 to 1896, and now brings into being a simulating band of friends called the Anglo-American League which was organized at Stafford House, London, July 13, 1898, less than ten days after Dewey and Schley had destroyed the Spanish fleets.

This new league, like the Cobden Club, is simply the British Government under a mask.

We take the following editorial from a prominent weekly paper controlled by a Scotch-Irishman to show how the treasonable work of this league is being done by men claiming to be American citizens.

"We have come to the parting of the ways and must decide whether we are to continue following Washington's advice or accept England's implied offer to form an Anglo-American alliance. This is a serious and difficult question to decide. Our inborn sentiment of freedom draws one way, and manifest duty another. The war in which we are now engaged is giving us a broader view of our

position among the nations. While it is giving us an opportunity to demonstrate our strength, it is also showing us who our friends and enemies are. And is doing the same for other nations. It is proving that a belligerent racial feeling exists between the nations. The Anglo-Saxons are on one side and the Latins on the other, while the Slavs form a less demonstrative third, more or less opposed to the other two. In this new vision the work of the hand of destiny pointing out to us a possible future of greater grandeur for the race? Is it according to the eternal fitness of things that the two great Anglo-Saxon nations are to join hands in the work of letting the light of an advanced civilization break thru the gloom of superstition and bigotry that now enshrouds the Latins and the Slavs? Is there to be a great racial war in which the Latin nations are to give way to more democratic and enlightened forms of government? Considering the immediate present, if we are to continue the policy our government is now pursuing it will be highly necessary that we form an alliance with Great Britain. Without the moral and material support of the latter, we cannot hope to carry on a war with European nations that will involve the acquiring and holding of territory in distant waters. We must be friendly with Great Britain or remain at home. The universal cry for intervention in the Cuban affair has demonstrated effectually that our people are not content to maintain a stay at home policy. The ultimate result must then be an alliance with Great Britain. While such an alliance between

these two nations would be so powerful as to maintain a peace policy among the nations."

Elwyn A. Barron, the London special correspondent of the Times-Herald, under date of March 10, sent the following to his paper:

"A gentleman, who is perhaps more authoritative in literature than in politics, has said to me how much a pity he thinks it that circumstances do not yet permit the United States to be included in a concert of great powers for the peaceful government of the world. Said he: 'Were the United States politically and commercially interested in this so-called eastern question, its perfect settlement in accordance with the highest demands of civilization would be a matter of but a few months. Excellent as is the mind-our-own-business policy of the United States as a purely domestic virtue, it withdraws from universal interest what could be a most important, vital influence. That attitude must be changed eventually, and the sooner that change is effected the better will the result be to civilization. A very great step in that direction will be taken if the congress of the United States ratifies the Anglo-American treaty. That would lead to English and American co-operation along lines now scarcely dreamed of, and for the accomplishment of purposes now only contemplated by those clear previsionaries whom the merely plodding world styles dreamers. Should England and America earnestly and loyally unite in a political bond the government systems of the world would be revolutionized and harmonized in less than fifty years. The obstacle in the way to such a desirable

consummation is the personal ambition of petty politicians and self-seekers. And that is really a tremendous obstacle, one sufficiently great, I fear, to prevent such a working alliance ever being effected.' "—U. R. A.

Alliance! And for What!

(By Joaquin Miller)

Alliance! And with whom? For what?

Comes there the skin-clad Vandal down
From Danube's wilds with vengeance hot?

Comes Turk with torch to sack the town?
And wake the world with battle-shot?

Come wild beasts loosened from the lair?
No, No! Right fair blue Danube sweeps;

No, No! There's something more than this—
Or Judas' kiss? Or Serpent's hiss?
There's mischief in the air!

Alliance! And with whom? For what?

Did we not bear a hundred years
Of England's hate, hot battle-shot,
Blent, ever blent, with scorn and jeers?
And we survived it, did we not?

We bore her hate, let's try to bear
Her love; but watch her, and beware!
Beware the Greek with gifts and fair,
Kind promises and courtly praise,

Beware the serpent's subtle ways—
There's mischief in the air!

Alliance! And for what? With whom?

She burned our Freedom's Fane. She spat
Vile venom on the sacred tomb

Of Washington; the while she sat
High throned, fat fed, and safe at home,
And bade slaves hound and burn and slay,
Just as in Africa yesterday;
Just as she would, will, when she dare,
Send sword and torch, and once again
Raze to the dust Freedom's Fane—
There's mischief in the air!

Alliance! Twice with sword and flame;
Alliance! Thrice with craft and fraud;
And now she comes in Freedom's name.
In Freedom's name? The name of God!
Go to—the Boers. For shame, for shame,
With wedge of gold you split us twain,
Then launched your bloodhounds on the main;
But now, my lords, so soft, so fair—
How long would this a-lie-ance last?
Just long enough to tie us fast—
Then music in the air!!!

America stood among the nations of the earth without a peer as the honored home of freeman, July 4, 1898; her one hundred and twenty-second anniversary as an independent nation. She had grown from a weak, discordant confederacy of thirteen states covering a mere fringe of an undeveloped country along the Atlantic Coast with a population of less than three millions to a mighty Republic of forty-six states and two organized territories besides Alaska; extending from the Atlantic to the Pacific and from the Gulf of Mexico to the Lakes of the North, with her left arm extending

far beyond the lakes to the shores of the frozen seas of the Arctic circle; and with a population of nearly ninety millions. She had just past thru a successful war to free a neighboring people from despotism with her own sons—North and South—proudly marching home from victory under the flag of Washington; as did their patriotic fathers in the early days of American glory.

America was still the Republic of Washington as pure a creation of the Spiritual God of Creation, as any earthly institution that ever existed for the benefit of man. The nation with whom America was then contending had been formerly a friend and never a deceitful enemy. Of this glorious anniversary of her independence America had only one of the nations as a bitter, unrelenting enemy and that was England, whose naval and military officers predicted defeat when the war with Spain commenced.

England in two wars, and by financially abetting a great civil war, had completely failed to destroy the liberty of America. Fearing that another attempt would annihilate British influence on the Western Continent and make republics of Australia and Canada both growing restless under foreign masters; the London government adopted a safer method than war to dispose of the "great snake." Instead of cutting it in two and then into smaller pieces as was the British purpose in financing the civil war it must now become by a friendly understanding, "stronger than a written treaty," a tail to the British lion.

The first move in this delectable campaign was

assigned by the powers in London to Lord Beresford, Rear-Admiral of the British Navy who made a flank movement on Washington by way of Japan then preparing for war with Russia. A staff correspondent of the Chicago Tribune met the Admiral at Omaha, February 16, 1899. The following morning, the Tribune reported the interview as follows:

"England, America, Germany and Japan, should unite in maintaining the open-door to China; peaceably if they could, otherwise, if they must. France and Russia had no place in trade calculations, their aim being territorial domination and the consequent tax levy upon conquered subjects. The coalition of France and Russia, he named as the common foe, the Bear and the Fox, who must be met at once with force and craft. Lord Beresford asserted he saw ready to hand the weapon to check Russian insolence, French deception and the dissolution of the Celestial Empire itself. Back-bone was to be put into the Chinese government; its army reorganized with English, American, German and Japanese officers, let them make it into a force capable of protecting China. China was to make a declaration that its ports were open to the world so as to place it in a position to say it could protect investors. China would welcome such aid today. It wants to be braced. Lord Beresford smiled at the suggestion that Russia and France might oppose actively such a consummation of world trade doctrine. 'What of it?' He said, with a laugh—a naval laugh it might be designated. It gave a yearning expression to his

face and caused the muscles to grow tense with an expression not lamb-like.

"Then, I think would have been the time for England and America to say 'Stand back!' and they would have stood back. Do not misunderstand me tho I am an Irishman and it has been said, that when an Irishman can't find a fight, he picks one.

"In the place of the word alliance, which he considered to smack too much of a formal treaty, Lord Beresford substituted 'understanding.' Tho he did not make the statement direct, Lord Beresford's remarks were susceptible of the interpretation, that in the case of the two Anglo-Saxon nations, he hoped eventually for closer ties. The interests of England and America in China today are identical and they will be equal sufferers if Russia and France have their way and close the door of trade; the American support for which, I contend, is not contingent upon the Philippine question in any essential. The American cotton trade had won the control of Northern China, the Province of Manchuria, which Russia wants, before the outbreak of the Spanish-American war, and American machinery was selling over all competitors before that date.'

From Chicago, Beresford went to Washington to pay his respects to his "friend" John Hay, to whom he gave the "open-door" as an American instead of an English policy, in order to break Russian and American friendship. While in Washington, he suggested the idea of uniting the English and American navies in yearly manoeuvres which Roosevelt prevented. We find in the interview of Beresford, the first suggestion of a "friendly under-

standing" in lieu of treaty; and a closer union of the two Anglo-Saxon nations.

Beresford evidently dropt off one of his aids at San Francisco, to start new alarms to frighten America. The alarm bells were sounded on the Pacific Coast, while Beresford was still in Washington consulting John Hay. The coming enemy was now headed by Germany. The San Francisco Evening Post February 27, 1899, printed the following story by a "reliable correspondent:"

"Germany is planning a great coup d'etat that not only means the acquisition of the Philippine Islands by that government, but the defeat of American territorial expansion."

The Evening Post said: "The authority for the foregoing statement is a man who has furnisht more valuable information to the United States concerning affairs in the Pacific than any other person, and his source of information is unquestioned.

"For the best reasons his identity cannot be revealed, but he is the man who gave the government the information that impelled Uncle Sam to add the Ladrone Islands to his possession. He has just returned from a so-journ of some months in Germany, during which time he had the entree of diplomatic circles."

"As I told you when I was in San Francisco before, Germany has for years been furnishing arms and ammunition to the Filipinos and assiduously sowing the seeds of rebellion, with the sole object of harassing Spain, till she would be ready to part with them for a song. Germany was only waiting

a pretext to land troops in the Philippines when Dewey's unexpected victory upset all the plans."

"Then Germany abandoned the contemplated coup de main and took up Aguinaldo. It was under Germany's orders that he organized his provisional government. Several batteries of four-inch Krupp guns are now on their way to the Philippines on German ships.

"The most startling bit of information concerning the coup that Germany is contemplating, was given me by a general officer of the German army. In conversation one evening he said: "Germany recognizes the fact that the only hope of continental Europe lies in striking one determined blow that will forever discourage the expansion policy of America."

"Russia, which is giving repeated assurance of the friendliest feeling toward the United States, in order to avert suspicion, has drawn France into a combination of the three powers. Russia is getting all the ships she can into the Pacific without exciting suspicion or distrust. Germany is negotiating with Argentina and Chile for the purchase, or at least the first call on their fast armored cruisers. She expects to get the Nueva de Julio, San Martin and the Garibaldi from Argentina and the O'Higgins and the new Esmeralda and the Captain Pratt from Chile. All but the latter are first class armored cruisers of twenty knots speed.

"The plan is to purchase and man these vessels with Germans and rendezvous at the Marshall Islands in the South Pacific. They would then be

between Dewey and Hawaii and cut off communication with this country.

"When the time comes for the coup, the combined fleets of Germany, Russia and France will take possession of the Philippines under the pretext of restoring order and protecting the interests of those countries. The only fear is that England may interfere, but the three powers hope to be able to convince her that the move has no significance, and is absolutely necessary for the protection of their interests. If England is not placated, means will be found of occupying her attention elsewhere."

Instead of Aguinaldo being at work under the orders of Germany, he was then being directed by William Bray, an Englishman in charge of the Philippine Junta at Hong Kong the British headquarters in China.

The following scare came thru Arthur I. Clark to the Chicago Tribune, dated London, August 21, 1900:

"Russia is seeking to disrupt the friendly relations existing between the United States and England, but so far has made poor progress. But Russia will persist until she succeeds entirely, or fails completely. This discovery was made by Julian Ralph, while on a special commission to the continent for the Daily Mail, and is exploited fully on the editorial page of that paper this morning.

"Russia has past the word, all over her circuit of influence, that America is growing too English, and that every effort that can be put forth must be exerted to break the harmony and good feeling

between the two nations. This new attitude has been adopted partly in the interest of France, but more largely in general Continental behalf. The policy arrived at a few months ago when the Boers, having plotted, declared and began war on Great Britain. Having argued that the Boers were worthy of sympathy as the under dog in the struggle, these countries have now effected so great a moral combination against England, that it is she who is now the under dog. She has no first class power but America which offers her the slightest ground of hope for a friendly bearing towards her in case the bitter feeling of today generates into war against her tomorrow.

"Russia's plan encouraged by Austria, France and Germany, is to strip Great Britain naked of support before such a war begins. It was thot on the continent a few months ago, that France might make the attack. I believe that danger is over. It has been dissipated by the troubles in China, which gives the French people the distraction their government desired. It was in view of the possibility of war between France and Great Britain that the project of a Russian-American Alliance was set in motion. Were such an alliance to be effected, England would be deprived not only of her sole hope of assistance, but the greatest source of her food, for when all other ocean-lanes were blocked against her, American ships could still bring food stuffs to her by northerly routes, too far removed from the busiest ocean channels to be policed by any navy or combination of two navies now existing.

"True, the financial loss to America, were she

to enter such an agreement, would be incalculable. It would lose for that country her greatest chance to enrich herself, but Russia fancied this point would be overlooked or would be regarded as a subordinate interest in an alliance so grandly moral and so purely pious."

"The project was not progressing satisfactorily to Russia thus far. The opposition met with was the tremendous weight of American sagacity. The Russians vacated the best position which any country enjoyed in competition for American regard and threw away American friendship when America went to war with Spain. When that war was declared, Count Mouravieff and the Russian Cabinet felt like the German Statesmen who declared that the United States was a large, shapeless monster, which might some day wrest the mastery of the world from European powers, if not throttled then and there. It was Russia who conceived and tried to ripen the plan for a European combination against the United States. At that time, all the powers in Europe sounded, approved the idea except England. Some countries like Austria, grew hot and excited for its fruition. It pleased Germany; France played the more eager part, as might be expected, but England broke up the plot. She acknowledged her friendship for America and the government at Washington knows what valuable assistance it got from England. From that time, until the two Spanish fleets were blown off the face of the water, checked and plainly beaten thru the war, Russia still worked ahead for crippling America. It was her fanatic belief—and this gained ground in

Vienna and Berlin—that the Southern States of America would re-open their rebellion and break up the republican confederacy. Dangling this hope before the European powers, Russia persisted by back door means as well as by front door ones in her extraordinary activity against the great Republic. I assume this must be well known to the government at Washington, as in all the courts of Europe.”

We will close our quotations with the following from Washington, in the associated press dispatches, just after the Russian-Japanese war:

“If Japan so chooses, Russia will have no outlet left on the Pacific and no terminal for her Siberian railroad. Great Britain and the United States have both lent their moral aid to Japan in the war, and both are interested to see that Russia is cut off from the Pacific. Their influence will be exerted in the condition to be imposed by Japan to have Vladivostok alienated from Russia.

“The United States has had no alliance or understanding with Japan, but the strong sympathy exhibited by our government and people is fully appreciated by the Japanese. Secretary Hay’s splendid diplomacy saved China from partition at a critical time when Japan could not have singly opposed. That act won the gratitude of both China and Japan, and it will ever be remembered. In the changes wrought by the war, American interests will be immensely benefitted. The threat of the Russian power in the Pacific is removed by Japanese arms. The Russian policy of commercial expulsion that would have shut us entirely out of Manchuria

and all other Russianized Asiatic provinces is ended. The war thus brings us great and unexpected benefits at least equal to those that Great Britain will receive thru her alliance with Japan and at the cost of perilous risks."

The above quotations show how the serpents in British diplomacy, aided by John Hay, deluded the American government and turned it at what the Anglo-American League called the parting of the ways. It is a period that Americans cannot look back to with pride.

The Serpent Grows Bolder.

In 1866 Victoria sent us the Cobden Club; in 1898 she sent us the Anglo-American League; in 1913 her grandson, George V, sent us, via the American Bar Association per Lord Haldine, the Lord High Chancellor of England, a kingly greeting as follows: "I entertain the high hope that the deliberations of the distinguished men of both countries who are to assemble at Montreal may add yet further to the esteem and good will of the people of the United States and Canada and the United Kingdom."

On the face of this greeting appears no harm, but the Lord High Chancellor had also an address prepared in London, as stated by Haldine himself and approved, word by word and line by line, by George V; then O. K'd by Sir Edward Grey, the British foreign Secretary, as an official declaration to be published in London, France, Germany, Russia and China immediately after being delivered before the American Bar Association. The general theme of the address was "Higher Nationality," not

the kind recommended to Americans by Washington, but one to set aside that and the nationality which caused so many thousand Americans to sacrifice their lives in the service of their country during the Civil War; for a Triple Union between the United States, Canada and Great Britain. Mr. Haldine urged the American lawyers to use their influence to develop the feeling for this Higher Nationality, and to "bestow thot upon the best methods for drawing into closer harmony the nations of a race in which all have a pride," closing with this sentiment: "If that be now a far spread inclination, then indeed may the peoples of these three great nations say to Jersualem—Thou shalt be built; and to the Temple, Thy foundations shall be laid."

Lord Haldine delivered his king's address and greeting before the American Bar Association, composed of men who generally make and execute the laws of the Republic and who are presumed to be patriots, sworn to support the Constitution and laws of their country; yet, this national body of educated Americans, with an ex-president of the Republic present as a member sat and tamely listened, with evident approval, to this British lesson in treason, and uttered not a word of protest against the destroying proposals of George V to whirl the Republic of Washington into political space as a British satellite in despotism, instead of maintaining it, as Washington made it—the **Principal Planet of Freedom**, around which all nations would circle, drawing beneficent light and vigor.

Many of the seven hundred Americans who

formed the Continental Union League to unite Canada and America in a Continental Republic, were present at Montreal, favoring a Higher Nationality, by re-uniting England and America in the British Empire. We find in this disgraceful change, a convincing proof that the King of Darkness is still exercising his powers in the civic, moral and religious affairs of men, and that the Aryan mandate to be constantly on guard against his influence is as necessary in 1914 as it was when given by the Spiritual God of Creation, at the cradle of the race.

Next comes, from an international Conference composed of Earl Gray and Andrew Carnegie—the following bold scheme:

“The erecting of monuments in Great Britain and this country. The King of England to set the foundation stone of the main monument in Great Britain and the President of the United States to lay the foundation stone of the principal shaft in this country. While the ceremonies are being carried out, it is urged, labor should cease for five minutes at a given time, and schools should close.

“The endowment of chairs of British-American history, based upon an interchange of professors, the awarding of prizes for essays, and the co-operation of committees in the preparation of a history of a century of peace, from which text books and school books in the several countries may be prepared or revised.

“An annual peace day celebration in the schools, universal religious services of thanksgiving, the cordial approval of early appointment of a prepar-

atory committee as recommended by the last Hague Conference, the celebration in Ghent, after consultation with the municipality, and an international commemorative medal, are other features of the report. The erection of arches marking the points where the proposed highways, Quebec to Miami in the East, and Los Angeles to Vancouver in the West, cross the international boundary, are also suggested."

To identify Mr. Wharton Barker, twice a candidate for the presidency, banker, philanthropist, and statesman, of Philadelphia, with this farce John A. Stewart, Chairman of its Executive Committee, sent the following letter: "I have been directed to invite you to become a member of the committee for the celebration of the one hundredth anniversary of peace among English-speaking peoples. The enclosed pamphlet states fully the purpose for which this organization is being formed. In accepting membership you assume no obligation other than that which may be voluntary. The committee hopes to be honored with your early acceptance of this invitation."

Mr. Barker sent the following patriotic reply: "I must decline to serve as a member of a General Committee that will stand sponsor for an Executive Committee that will direct a celebration in 1914-1915 of the one hundred years of peace between the United States and England, because I must keep my actions in accord with my convictions.

I could not serve in such work as is proposed without loss of self-respect; without putting aside all the ideals I cherish; without forgetting the

patriotic teachings and examples of my ancestors. Of course, I believe in peace, and I abhor war, but there are times when war is less hurtful than the wrongs men suffer from aggressions only war can stop. When such situations exist, I am for war. I have no respect for "peace at any price" men; for I cannot believe such men can preserve liberty, justice, equality and opportunity, the brotherhood of man nor worship God after the manner of Him, who preached the Sermon on the Mount.

It is true the United States and Great Britain have not engaged in physical war with each other for almost one hundred years, but it is also true that Great Britain in 1862 would have waged war upon the United States in alliance with France, for the purpose of breaking up the Union of the American States, but for action of the Russian Emperor, Alexander II. Many remember the coming of Russian ships of war to New York and San Francisco in 1863, but few know the why of that action.

August 17, 1879, when I was breakfast-guest of Grand Duke Constantine, at his Palovske Palace, the Emperor made an opportunity to speak with me on several important and great acts of his life. I will speak now of only one statement—I have heretofore published the statement at length. He said: "In the autumn of 1862 the Government of France and Great Britain proposed to Russia in a formal but not in an official way the joint recognition by European powers of the independence of the Confederate States of America. My immediate answer was: I shall not participate in such action,

and I will not acquiesce. On the contrary, I shall accept the recognition of the independence of the Confederate State by France and Great Britain, as *causus belli* for Russia. And in order that the government of France and Great Britain may understand that this is no idle threat. I will send a Pacific fleet to San Francisco and an Atlantic fleet to New York. Sealed orders to both admirals were given."

After a pause, he preceeded: "My fleets arrived at the American ports; there was no recognition of the independence of the Confederate States by Great Britain and France. The American rebellion was put down and the great American Republic continues. All this I did because of love for my own dear Russia, rather than for love of the American Republic. I acted thus because I understood that Russia would have a more serious task to perform if the American Republic, with advanced industrial development, were broken up and Great Britain should be left in control of most branches of modern industrial development.

"During the whole period of the war, 1861-1865, between the Northern and Southern States of the American Union, Great Britain sought in one way or another to break up the Nation—weak then, now powerful. Today Great Britain seeks to cajole the United States by 'peace celebrations,' by 'arbitration treaties,' by 'true history in the schools,' by marriage and social arrangements, by 'gentlemen's agreements,' that would establish alliance compacts, offensive and defensive. All this work to strengthen Great Britain.

Surely the United States can gain nothing from the action your committee proposes, so I am not in accord with the program I am asked to take part in—I am in opposition.

If Great Britain and the United States would propose an immediate general disarmament, I would believe both sought peace; but the war plans and expenditures of both nations forbid such belief. Surely the great majority of the American people know that the revolution of 1776 was fought for a just cause, and under the guidance of George Washington we intend to keep out of entangling alliances with foreign nations."

This delectable program to erect a statue in Washington to Victoria so cunningly devised by the schemers of Old and New England to destroy American Democracy and restore to the British Crown the lost jewel of 1776, was partially suspended in August, 1914, to allow English vampires to glut their vengeance in the blood of Germany because she was showing superiority in peaceful industry, commerce, science, art, invention, philosophy and literature.

Since the Boer war exposed England as a decaying power, she has been scheming, plotting and combining with the nations of Europe against Germany, until she has all involved in the most destructive war in the history of Pagan, Turk or Christian times. In 1899, as shown above, she denounced France and Russia "the bear and the fox" to America, as enemies to be guarded against, and later denounced the Belgians as Congo-Barbarians. Now she fawns on all of them as friends

and with her demon hands raised to Heaven loudly bemoans their misfortunes as her sacrifice—pawns in her game of destruction, but such has been the policy of England since the days of William of Normandy.

While the men of England withdrew from activity in Earl Grey's American farce—not so with the Pilgrims and Carnegie. The real Americans had a patriotic program for the second week of September, 1914, to celebrate the Centennial of the Star Spangled Banner at Baltimore, in charge of a National Centennial Commission, composed of President Wilson, Ex-presidents Taft and Roosevelt, the presiding officers of the Senate and the House, the commanders of the army and the navy, and seventeen governors of States.

To neutralize the effect of the Star Spangled Banner Celebration, and over-awe Germany, a bill was prepared by the American-Pilgrims and presented to Congress by Henry Flood, Chairman of the House Committee of Foreign Affairs, to create a National Commission to have charge of the Centennial of the signing of the Ghent Treaty of Peace, as proposed by Earl Grey, with an appropriation of twenty-five thousand dollars to defray expenses. The bill was favored by Secretary of State, Wm. J. Bryan and prest by the chairman of the Committee, but Representative James R. Mann of Illinois disposed of the farce by blandly inquiring: "Why should we have this celebration to revive animosities of a hundred years ago? Why not forget them? If you want to do a decent thing, why not do it up brown by celebrating the burning of the

Capitol by the British?" A roll call of the House sent the bill to the waste basket by a vote of 185 to 52.

In our opinion it would advance the cause of civilization, if the war, so cruelly commenced, would end in wiping England off the maps of the world. That she deserves such a fate, by reason of her numerous crimes, is shown by one of her most eminent sons as follows:

Where is The Flag of England?

(By Henry Labouchere).

And the winds of the world made answer
North, South, East and West—
"Wherever there's wealth to covet,
Or land that can be possest;
Wherever are savage races,
To cozen, coerce and scare,
Ye shall find the vaunted ensign;
For the English flag is there!

"Ay, it waves o'er the blazing hovels
Whence African victims fly,
To be shot by explosive bullets
Or to wretchedly starve and die!
And where the beachcomber harries
Isles of Southern sea,
At the peak of his hellish vessel
'This the English flag flies free.

"The Maori full oft hath curst it,
With the bitterest dying breath;
And the Arab has histed his hatred
As he spits at its folds in death.

The hapless fellah has feared it
On Tel-el-Kebir's parcht plain,
And the Zulu's blood has stained it
With a deep, indelible stain.

"It has floated o'er scenes of pillage,
It has flaunted o'er deeds of shame,
It has waved o'er the fell marauder
As he ravisht with sword and flame.
It has lookt upon ruthless slaughter,
And massacre dire and grim;
It has heard the shrieks of the victims
Drown even the Jingo hymn.

"Where is the flag of England?
Seek the land where the natives rot;
Where decay and assured extinction
Must soon be the people's lot.
Go! search for the once glad islands,
Where disease and death are rife,
And the greed of a callous commerce
Now battens on human life!

"Where is the flag of England?
Go, sail where rich galleons come
With shoddy and 'loaded' cottons,
And beer and Bibles and rum;
Go, too, where brute force has triumpht,
And hypocrisy makes its lair;
And your question will find its answer,
For the flag of England is there!"

Only American traitors can support Earl Grey's
program. While governor general of Canada, he

referred, at a peace congress dinner in New York, to the will of Cecil Rhodes and his pet scheme. In explaining this reference to its readers, the London Standard said: "Among other aspirations in the will of Cecil Rhodes, to which Earl Grey, Governor-General of Canada referred in his speech at the peace congress dinner in New York, on April 17 were: The ultimate recovery of the United States by Great Britain, British occupation of the whole of Africa and South America and the Seaboards of Japan and China." We believe it was at this dinner that Earl Grey returned to America as a peace offering, a portrait of Benjamin Franklin pilfered by an ancestor in 1814, while burning and sacking the Capitol buildings at Washington. Perhaps, if Americans are submissive to his Britanic will, during the falsifying years of 1914 and 1915, he may return the scalps of American women and children taken by Indians in 1778 and 1812 and now stored in the tower of London as vouchers for the expenditure of British gold. As a part of the Grey program, we suggest that those American scalps be returned and interred near the bones of the twelve thousand American sailors, starved and tortured victims of the British prison-ships of Wallabout Bay, during the war of independence.

Up to the formation of the Anglo-American League, no epithet was too severe for the British press to apply to Americans, who were spoken of generally as Yankees, with the prefix of low, vulgar, sharp or mean; Yankee Adventurers; Yankee Swindlers. Kipling in his American notes, says: "Americans delude themselves into the belief that

they talk English, and I have already been pitied for speaking with an English accent. The man who pitied me spoke, so far as I was concerned, the language of thieves—and they all do.”

British books are full of the same sort of cockney abuse. They heaped the most scurrulous abuse on President Roosevelt for recommending a reform in American spelling, but afterward sent Cecil Spring-Rice as Ambassador to identify him if possible as favoring the recovery of America by England. We also find England's fine hand in creating trouble for America in Mexico and Japan; also in France, Germany and Russia. The statesmen in Washington who cannot see war clouds rising over America must be mentally blind or traitors.

The press dispatches of October 30, 1914, tell us that Col. Theodore Roosevelt told the students at Princeton in an address that he had seen the plans of two nations now involved in the European war to capture great American seaports and hold them for ransom in case of hostilities with this country.

“It is the duty of this country to put itself in condition to defend its rights should they be invaded.

“I, myself, have seen the plans of two of the countries now engaged in the European war, to invade the United States, capture our great cities and hold them for ransom, considering that our standing army was too small to be dangerous.

“This would cripple our country and give the enemy the means to pursue the war. I would rather see the cities destroyed than to have one cent paid in ransom. I have seen the definite plans for the

capture and ransoming of New York and San Francisco.

"I hope to see the time when our nation shall come to a status in which every young American man shall have the training in marksmanship and military customs which will enable him to take an effective part in the defense of his nation should its rights be invaded. I do not believe in striking soft."

Colonel Roosevelt also gave some views in regard to the means of obtaining world peace.

"It is my earnest hope that we shall finally achieve international status by which there shall be a posse comitatus when we can combine to coerce any recalcitrant power. but we have seen the utter worthlessness of scraps of paper and other treaties that may be swept aside like dust in a windy street.

"A fight never was won by parrying; you've got to hit, and not hit soft. The American people owe it to themselves to make their hand safeguard their head."

Col. Roosevelt later refused to amplify his statement in regard to the plans for seizure of United States seaports.

"We have all been shocked and horrified by the tragedy which has swept all civilized Europe into the gulf of ruin in the last three months. Every American citizen has been forced to realize it is the emptiest folly, as the world is at present, to rely on mere paper treaties. We've got to rely on the officers and enlisted men of the army and navy of the United States.

"We've got to take our position in the world

seriously, ready to do strict justice to every country, scorning to attack a nation weaker than ourselves, scorning to say wrong of any other nation, scorning to take any position that we can't back up, and ready to defend ourselves with our own right arm if the occasion warrants it."

It was not at all necessary for Colonel Roosevelt to name the nations who made the plans to capture New York and San Francisco. Americans, certainly, have not forgotten when England launched her first dreadnaughts. She told us that one of them could lie off more than seven miles from New York City and lay it in ashes; and her press boasted that she had Japanese as officers' servants on American warships to obtain our naval secrets which caused such servants to be dismissed by our Naval Department. Nor have they forgotten the following braggadosio-threat in Rudyard Kipling's American notes:

"When the City of Pekin steamed through the Golden Gate, I saw with great joy that the blockhouse which guarded the mouth of the 'finest harbor in the world, sir,' could be silenced by two gunboats from Hong Kong with safety, comfort and dispatch." * * *

"From five miles out at sea I have seen a test of her 'fortified' forts. A ship of the power of H. M. S. Collingwood would wipe out any or every town from San Francisco to Long Branch; and three first-class ironclads would account for New York, Bartholdi's Statue and all.

"There is ransom and loot past the counting of man on her seaboard alone—plunder that would enrich a nation—and she has neither a Navy nor

half a dozen first-class ports to guard the whole. No man catches a snake by the tail, because the creature will sting; but you can build a fire round a snake that will make it squirm. When one hears so much of the nation that can whip the earth it is, to say the least of it, surprising to find her so temptingly spankable."

Nor have Americans forgotten the unfriendly suggestions to Japan when Admiral Evans took his fleet of 16 ships to the Pacific the British press predicted dire disaster. The *Pall Mall Gazette* declared that "The rumors set afloat about the ineffectiveness of the American ships were well founded. America's greater interest is peace and that is only in the United States, that the cruise of the Pacific fleet need cause anxiety."

The *London Spectator* warned us that we may go too far in arousing the anger of the Japanese. Those who are responsible for the Union cannot forget that Japan, with her magnificent army and most effecient fleet, is inhabited by one of the prouded races in the world, and yet a race which if we are perfectly truthful, is constantly suffering from the blights and insults of the white races, which reject her people as immigrant citizens. In other words "American statesmen may well feel that it is possible that in some burst of unexpected emotion the Japanese people may insist on asserting their equality with the white races in all respects by an unhesitating appeal to the sword."

Wm. T. Stead in the *London Daily Mail* said "The American Pacific fleet, we are told, is supposed to be a menace to Japan. In reality if it

ventures into the North Pacific Uncle Sam will be bound over to good behavior to the whole extent of that fleet. The United States invulnerable on land is venturing her head into the jaws of the Japanese lion, and while the fleet remains in the Pacific Americans will be very civil to Japan." Thus speaks the man who inspired the Rhodes scheme and assisted the British government in organizing the Anglo-American League.

The experience of the ages tells us that coming events cast their shadows before. The shadow of the war now raging in Europe was visible to all nations for more than forty years. The persistence of English efforts to destroy the American Republic by open and covert attacks, coupled with Kipling's glee over the defenseless condition of the San Francisco and New York harbors; the suggestions to Japan by Stead and the London press when Admiral Evans took the American fleet to the Pacific, and the plans seen by Colonel Roosevelt for the capture of both cities, throw a British shadow over America that tells us that if England crushes Germany, the American Republic must fight for its existence within ten years.

The Monroe Doctrine.

In 1898 Russia was at Port Arthur forming a wedge between China and Japan on the Pacific side of Asia. She had sold Alaska to America thirty years before for a nominal sum in order to strengthen us on the American side of the Pacific. It was our political interest as much as Russia's that she should retain and strengthen her position on the Pacific. We owed a debt of gratitude to Russia

for sending her navies to New York and San Francisco in 1862.

This 1862 incident was not the first display of Russia's friendship for the American government. From the second annual message of John Quincy Adams December 5, 1826, we take the following: "By the decease of Emperor Alexander II of Russia, which occurred contemporaneously, with the last session of Congress, the United States has been deprived of a long tried, steady and faithful friend. Born to the inheritance of absolute power, and trained in the school of adversity, from which no power on earth, however absolute, is exempt, that monarch, from his youth, had been taught to feel the force and value of public opinion and to be sensible that the interest of his own government would best be promoted by frank and friendly intercourse with this Republic, as those of his people would be advanced by a liberal commercial intercourse with this country. A candid and confidential interchange of sentiments between him and the Government of the United States upon the affairs of Southern America, took place at a period not long preceeding his demise, and contributed to fix that course of policy which left to the other governments of Europe no alternative but that of sooner or later recognizing the independence of our southern neighbors, of which the example, had by the United States, already been set."

Here we find reference to the "Monroe Doctrine," encouraged by Russia, and not as now claimed by England.

At this time Canning, England's Prime Minister,

was trying to induce America to join in a policy that would place Mexico and the South American States at the mercy of England. In 1822 Canning writing to his minister at Madrid, said: "If the Spaniards are not wrong headed, if they will do us justice and enabled us to plead for them without dishonoring ourselves, we may yet be the means of bringing all this confusion to an end. But if they misconstrue us, if they evince distrust instead of thankfulness, and deny us the means of satisfying England upon points of English interest, they may depend upon it that the scenes in American-Spain will not only enable, but compel us to remain not only neutral but indifferent to the fate of Spain in Europe."

Again December 31, 1823, to the same minister he said: "A monarchy in Mexico and a monarchy in Brazil, would cure the evils of universal democracy and prevent the drawing the line of demarcation which I most dread—America versus Europe. The United States naturally enough aim at this division and cherish the democracy which leads to it. While I was hesitating in September what shape to give the declaration, and protest, I sounded Mr. Rush, the American Minister here as to his powers and disposition to join us in any steps which we might take to prevent a hostile enterprise on the part of European powers against the Spanish-American States. He had no powers but would have taken upon himself to join with us if we would begin by recognizing the Spanish- American States. This we could not do; and so we went alone. But I have no doubt that his report to his government of this

sounding, which he probably represented as an overture, had a great share in producing the explicit declaration of the President.

December 14, 1824, he informed his king that the considerations heretofore presented so far as they related to the United States of America, were strengthened by the lapse of time. The connection between the government of the United States and those of Mexico and Columbia had been improved and consolidated and that the growing influence in undiminished measure between Mexico and the Cabinet at Washington, was to be expected. Three days afterward, writing to Granville, Ambassador at Paris, he exultingly said: "The fight has been hard, but it is won. The deed is done. The nail is driven. Spanish-America is free; and if we do not mismanage our matters sadly, she is English."

But every year from 1824 to 1915, says: "Canning you are a false prophet. Spanish-America is still free. Thanks to Monroe, Alexander of Russia, Adams and the Declaration of Independence, the inspirer of freedom."

We close the review of dangers to our Republic June 10, 1915, as dark clouds of war rise over us, because of the bravado of Anglo-Americans, who rush to death on the Lusitania to aid England and to defy Germany. The morning dispatches tell us that our old idol, Col. Roosevelt, is leading the maniacs screaming for war against Germany as "an outlawed barbarian" because of cruelties in Belgium and the destruction of the Lusitania. It is well Colonel to sympathize with suffering in the land of one of your forbears, but its bad to forget

Tipperary—the land of your grandmother,—where “English soldiers put to the sword blind and feeble men, women, boys and girls, and forct the people into old barns which they set on fire putting to the sword any who sought to escape; caught up children on the point of their swords, making them squirm in the air in their death agony; women were found hanging from the trees with children at their bosoms strangled in the hair of their mothers.”

“Not only did the English destroy crops and drive cattle into their own camps that the Irish might be starved, not only this, but they deliberately and with cunning purpose made a great slaughter of infants. The terrible phrase, almost the most terrible phrase in human records. “Nits will be lice” was the laughing murderous, and devilish justification for the slaughter of babes. The steel of English might ran red with the blood of Irish infancy. Lips that had not learned to speak a human word, lips that know nothing more than hang content at the circle of the mother’s breast were twitcht with agony, uttered screams of desperate pain, and grew purple in the wrench of violent death. Little feet that had but lately got the trick of balance ran, stumbled, and fell before the smoking swords of most inhuman murderers. Little hands that had but lately learned to fold themselves in prayer were raised in clamorous appeal for mercy to men who smote them down and set their heels on their stricken faces. “Nits will be lice” cried those slaughtering devils, and the beautiful flower of Irish childhood was crusht into the bloody ooze of a land that was like hell.—Harold Begbie.

If the Germans in Pagan or Christian times were guilty of such horrors as those committed in Ireland by the English we have not found the record.

Colonel, in 1912 we grieved over your defeat, but today after reading your wild appeal we thank God that Woodrow Wilson had the helm of the ship of state. That a son of Virginia, the mother of Washington, Jefferson, Madison and Monroe, is bringing the old ship back from the parting of the ways of 1898 to those of 1776, where **Americans** will hereafter man and command its destiny.

APPENDIX-1

EMERGONIANS

Constitution.

ARTICLE I.

Name.

This association shall be known as the Emergonians, and include country, state and national leagues.

ARTICLE II.

Objects.

The objects of this association shall be to aid in maintaining a perfect union, establishing justice, insuring domestic tranquility, providing for the common defense, promoting the general welfare and securing the blessing of liberty to our posterity:

1. By cultivating a pure and enlightened patriotism thru county, state and national leagues, to counteract the secret and open attempts of the Anglo-American league and Anglicized Americans to degrade our government to the position of an obsequious attendant in the barbarous march of British greed and oppression, as they circle the earth with the ruins of freedom and the blood of humanity.

2. By using the word "American" instead of the word "English" in all grades of our public

schools, relating to spelling, reading and grammar, which will bring our language and literature into harmony with our free institutions, and do justice to the cosmopolite inheritance of the nation.

3. By dedicating to Washington and the fathers of the Republic suitable temples in which lyceums may be maintained for the mental, moral and patriotic culture of the citizen, and as archives for their records.

4. By extending the scope of our school systems, to fully develop the intellectual merits of promising youths in state and national schools, as follows:

Each legislative district of a state shall hold annually a public competency examination, open to all the youths of such district who are not over the age of sixteen years, from whom a number, equaling the representation of said district in the state legislature, shall be certified for admission to a state university, where, after a four years' course of study, at the expense of the state, a further competency examination, open to all the students of said university, shall take place, for the promotion of a number, equaling the representation of such state in Congress, to a four years' course in a national university, at the expense of the nation.

In all examinations the moral character, as well as the mental and physical ability of the youth, must be considered.

Graduates of the state university, who are not promoted to the national university, shall be given diplomas and returned to the body of the people.

Graduates of the national university shall be assigned to duty in the civil and diplomatic service

of the Republic, which will place the highest intelligence and the best American manhood as guardians of free institutions in the representative positions of the Republic, at home and abroad.

5. By cherishing the purity of American homes—the nurseries of freedom, honor and virtue, and condemning the lewd influences of British society, by excluding from all positions of honor and trust, as enemies of republican government, American families who degrade their citizenship by marriage alliances with foreign titles. Also, those identified with the Anglo-American league and those favoring political alliances with European governments.

6. By cultivating, in spirit of the Monroe Doctrine, a close friendship with the republican governments of this continent; maintaining with them in commercial and industrial affairs the equitable principles of the Golden Rule, which will allow those who toil under liberal democratic systems a full share of the essential comforts due to labor from the humanity of an improving civilization.

7. By cultivating respect for law, order and morality, as the safest base upon which the national shield may be maintained for the protection of the individual citizen.

8. By encouraging the construction of good roads, and the planting of trees and ornamental shrubs, which will beautify urban and rural homes, and anchor the affections of the citizen to the fields and gardens of childhood, as the most cherished spots on earth.

ARTICLE III.

Membership.

Section 1. The membership of this association shall be confined to male and female citizens of the United States, over the age of eighteen years, who favor the purposes declared in Article II, of this Constitution, and make the following pledge:

I....., do solemnly declare, on my honor, that I have read Article II, of the Constitution of The Emergonians, and believe in each and all of the purposes therein set forth. That I will observe, defend and advocate them on all proper occasion, and will faithfully labor for their adoption by the political party with which I now or may hereafter affiliate.

Sec. 2. No religious or political qualification, other than the foregoing pledge, shall be required for membership in this league.

ARTICLE IV.

Officers.

The officers of this association, and of each of the county and state leagues, shall be a president, a secretary and a treasurer, who shall be over the age of twenty-one years, and be separately elected by ballot, at an annual conclave, to serve for one year and until their successors are qualified.

ARTICLE V.

Lecturers.

Section 1. The board of lecturers shall consist of three members, learned in the history and liberal institutions of the Republic; one of whom shall be elected annually, by ballot, to serve for three years and until his successor is qualified.

ARTICLE VI.

Directors.

The board of directors shall consist of nine members, over twenty-one years of age, three of whom shall be elected by separate ballot at the annual conclave to serve for three years and until their successors are qualified.

ARTICLE VII.

Duties of Officers.

Section 1. The president shall preside at the meetings of the league and at those of its board of directors. He shall enforce a due observance of the Constitution and establish leagues in states where the association has not been organized as a state league. He shall sign all orders and documents approved by the board of directors.

Sec. 2. The secretary shall keep correct records of the proceedings of the league and of the board of directors. He shall have charge of the seal, write all communications and carefully preserve the archives. In local leagues he shall also keep a list of the members, showing occupation and residence; collect fees and dues and pay the same to the treasurer, taking proper receipts therefor.

Sec. 3. The treasurer shall receive all moneys belonging to the league and keep an accurate account of receipts and disbursements. He shall make no payments without the written order of the board of directors, signed by the president and countersigned by the secretary. He shall make monthly reports, in writing, to the board of directors of the condition of the finance.

Sec. 4. The secretaries of local leagues shall forward monthly to the secretary of state leagues a statement of the number of members enrolled, and the state secretary shall likewise report to the national secretary the total number enrolled in his state.

Sec. 5. The board of directors shall have charge of the affairs and property of the league. The title of all property shall be vested in and held by them for the use of the league in advancing its principles, and for no other purpose. They shall make detailed reports to the annual conclaves, giving a full description, location and value of the property held by them.

ARTICLE VIII.

County Leagues.

County leagues shall consist of not less than fifteen citizens. Only one league shall be established in a county, except in counties having more than one congressional district, where a league may be allowed for each district. But leagues may have two or more branches within its jurisdiction when deemed for the public good.

ARTICLE IX.

State Leagues.

Section 1. When ten or more county leagues are established in a state, the president, with the approval of the board of directors, shall cause a conclave, composed of the officers, i. e., president, secretary, treasurer and lecturer of such leagues, to be held at some central point in such state, for the purpose of organizing a state league with of-

ficers as specified in Article IV of this Constitution, and elected in like manner, to serve for one year. Also a board of directors, to consist of three members, one of whom shall be elected annually to serve for three years. After which such state league shall have charge of the county leagues within the jurisdiction of such state.

Sec. 2. The by-laws of state leagues must be submitted to the national conclave for approval.

ARTICLE X.

Conclaves.

Section 1. The national league shall meet annually on the first Tuesday of May at Quincy, Ill., unless otherwise provided by a two-thirds vote at the preceeding conclave.

Sec. 2. State leagues shall meet annually on the last Tuesday of May at the capital city of their states, unless otherwise provided by a majority ballot at the preceeding conclave.

Sec. 3. County leagues shall meet monthly (except during July and August) at such time and place as may be provided by their board of directors.

ARTICLE XII.

Representation.

Section 1. The president, secretary, treasurer and lecturer of county leagues shall represent the leagues in their state conclaves. And such officers of state leagues shall represent their leagues in the national conclave.

Sec. 2. The ex-officers of state and national leagues shall continue during their pleasure as representatives-at-large in their respective league conclaves.

ARTICLE XII.

Committees.

The following standing committees, consisting of three members each, shall be appointed by the respective presidents of county, state and national leagues, upon induction to office:

1. National Tranquility. 2. General Welfare. 3. Common Defense. 4. Memorial Temples. 5. State and National Schools.

ARTICLE XIII.

Duties of Committees.

Section 1. The committee on National Tranquility shall recommend from time to time such historical exercises as will keep green in the affections of the people the sublime truths contained in the Declaration of Independence and the inspired wisdom of Washington's Farewell Address. They shall suggest exercises to stimulate national pride and maintain harmony among the people of the states.

Sec. 2. The committee on General Welfare shall maintain such exercises as will cherish national morality and the purity of homes. They shall suggest methods for the improvement of roads, beautifying homes and encouraging forestry.

Sec. 3. The committee on Common Defense shall take cognizance of attempts to violate the Monroe Doctrine; efforts of foreign leagues, associations or agents to influence American politics. They shall note and report American marriage alliances with foreign titles, and suggest methods to maintain an independent system of state militia

close to and in sympathy with the generous aspirations of the people.

Sec. 4. The committee on Memorial Temples shall have supervision of league temples and of the mental and physical exercises conducted therein.

Sec. 5. The committee on State and National Schools shall suggest and press on the members of state legislatures and of Congress the necessary legislation to establish and maintain such schools, and to amend the Civil Service Act to provide positions for the graduates of the National University.

ARTICLE XIV.

Dues and Fees.

Male members shall pay an admission fee of fifty cents, and a like sum annually. Females and youths shall be free.

ARTICLE XV.

National Days.

The 22d day of February and the 4th day of July shall be annually observed by the league, to commemorate the birth of Washington and the Declaration of Independence.

ARTICLE XVI.

Amendments.

No alterations or amendments shall be made to this Constitution without a two-thirds vote of the league in national conclave assembled.

APPENDIX-2

Hon. Edward F. Dunne, Governor of Illinois.

Dear Sir:—Allow me to call your attention to the enclosed clipping from the Quincy Journal of September 29, containing a notice by the University of Illinois for the appointment of Rhodes scholars, and briefly to a few historical facts which may have missed your notice relating to these scholarships.

While Cecil Rhodes was in London in July, 1898, consulting with Joseph Chamberlain and the Prince of Wales, later Edward VII, over plans for the destruction of the Boer republic, he, with all of London, was startled by echoes of Schley's victorious guns at Santiago while the vibrations of Dewey's Manila victories were still annoying ears, highly tuned by British military and naval experts for the joy of American defeats instead of victories.

Immediately Rhodes called a conclave of British dukes and lords, bishops and archbishops,, admirals and generals, judges and barristers, men of letters and of parliament, mayors of cities and many wise men, numbering more than four hundred (see New York World's Almanac for 1899), to devise means to rob America of her glory, and republicanism everywhere of its beneficent influence.

The conclave met July 13, at the Spofford House in London, the Duke of Sutherland presiding, and resolved itself into the Anglo-American League, with James Brice, M. P., as president; and an executive committee composed of the Duke of

Sutherland, Lord Coleridge, Earl Grey, William T. Stead and many others.

The purpose of this league was ostensibly stated to be "the cultivation of a friendly feeling between the two English speaking peoples, those of the United States and the British Empire," for which Cecil Rhodes pledged his immense ill-gotten African wealth, to educate American youths in British methods at Oxford, England.

The real purpose, tho at first hidden, is now known to the world—the destruction of the American republic by a reunion with England. When this scheme was launched, John Hay, a son of Illinois, was our ambassador at London, and his subsequent conduct clearly shows that he approved of Rhodes' undermining scheme and became an active aid. Within two weeks a branch of the London league was formed in New York by Whitelaw Reid, Hay's chum and co-editor of the New York Tribune, with a number of prominent and undoubted Americans enrolled as members to cover the treason.

Before the death of Rhodes, John Hay was made secretary of state at Washington, and his chum, Reid, was made ambassador at London, a change that could not take place without the approval of the committee on foreign relations in the senate, of which Mr. Cullom, of Illinois, was the chairman.

Between Reid in London and Hay in Washington, with the senate committee muzzled, the great American republic, against the wishes of the people, was turned from the ways of George Washington to those of George the Third, shooting republicanism out of the Filipinos and cheering England while

shooting liberty out of the Boers. Thus America was betrayed and disgraced by two of her servants placed where they could do the most injury with impunity.

When Rhodes' executors called for the first batch of American students, the call came to John Hay, who sent it under his seal of office to all the universities in America, thus making them aids in the scheme. By this time the true objects of the Rhodes scholarships were repeatedly made known by W. T. Stead, a managing director of the league, who claimed to have aided Rhodes in the preparation of his will.

Previous to 1898, a strong sentiment in Canada favored annexation to the United States, encouraged by the "Continental Union League" of New York, composed of John Hay and more than 700 leading Americans. This was before Hay Arnoldized. To check this movement, Earl Grey was sent to Canada, evidently with a list of members captured by White-law Reid from the Continental Union League and enrolled in the New York branch of the Anglo-American League, favoring annexation, not of Canada, but of the United States to the British Empire.

In April, 1912, Earl Grey attended a peace dinner in New York, where as a peace offering, he promised the Pilgrim Club to return to America a portrait of Benjamin Franklin, pilfered by an ancestor, while burning and sacking Washington in 1814. During his speech he referred to the will of Cecil Rhodes and his pet scheme, but did not go into details. However, in explaining the reference to its readers, the London Standard said: "Among the other

aspirations in the will of Cecil Rhodes, to which Earl Grey, governor general of Canada, referred in his speech at the peace congress dinner in New York on April 17, were: the ultimate recovery of the United States by Great Britain; British occupation of the whole of Africa and South America, and the seaboard of Japan and China."

As the first openly laid stepping stone to the annexation of America by Great Britain, Earl Grey has a comprehensive program prepared for 1914 and 1915, in which a clown's part has been assigned to the president of the United States, to the governors of our states, and even to our innocent school children, whose books are to be revised and falsified by British experts in that line.

In August last, George V sent Lord Haldane with greetings and an address approved in London, "word by word and line by line," then O.K.d by Sir Edward Grey, his foreign secretary, to be delivered at a meeting of the American Bar Association at Montreal. The theme of the address, so carefully prepared by the king, was "Higher Nationality" —not the nationality given by George Washington and the patriots of 1776 to America, but one to set that aside by a "Triple Union between the United States, Canada and Great Britain."

Lord Haldane urged the lawyers "to use their influence to develop a feeling for this Higher Nationality, and to bestow that upon the best methods for drawing into closer harmony, the nations of a race in which all have a pride."

As you know, Governor, the members of the bar are sworn to support the constitution and the laws

of the state and nation; and they are the men usually called upon to make and execute the laws, and are presumed to be loyal citizens, yet, in that national body of educated Americans, with the chief justice and an ex-president of the republic and several senators and congressmen sitting with them as members, there was not a voice raised in protest against the infamous proposal of George V. and his lord high chancellor, to whirl the republic of George Washington into political space as a British satellite instead of maintaining it as Washington made it—The Principal Planet of Freedom, around which all the other nations would circle, drawing beneficent light and vigor.

Oh, for a Jefferson, a Jackson, a Lincoln, or a Blaine to arouse the people to a sense of their danger and bring them back to the ways of Washington.

The tacit consent given by our lawyers to the proposed triple union, encouraged Mr. Page, our ambassador at London, to declare a few days since that "the United States is today English led and English ruled."

Governor, as it was a son of Illinois, John Hay, who opened the door to England to introduce this destroying illusion, is it not your duty as governor of Illinois, the home of the immortal Lincoln, of Douglas, of Trumbull, of Shields, of Yates, of Palmer, of Black and of Logan, to close the doors of Illinois against the propagation of Hay's treason before it gains further strength by the Earl Grey program exercises in our schools and churches during 1914 and 1915?

As the University of Illinois is supported by public taxes to produce moral, useful and loyal citizens of the state and nation, its president should not be allowed to select the strongest, mentally and physically, among his students, nor from the youths of the state, to become prospective traitors under British training at Oxford. There never was a day when the republic of Washington needed the moral, mental and physical strength of all of its sons to save it from native traitors, in the service of England, than it does today.

Your own love of American liberty, inherited from a patriotic father, will be your best guide in shielding the liberal institutions of America from being destroyed by the descendants of men who never became Americans, but remained Pilgrims, anxious to return to the servitude of British masters.

Respectfully, for the Republic,

MICHAEL PIGGOTT,

Quincy, Ill., October 6, 1913.

APPENDIX III.

America's Grand Jubilee.

Quincy, July 12, 1913.

Editor The Irish World:

First, allow me to congratulate you and your patriotic journal on being the most hated and feared editor and paper in the United States by the British government.

Second, allow me to suggest that the years 1914 and 1915 be sent into history as the years of American Jubilee—a period of festivity and joy, and of thanksgiving to the Almighty God for his beneficent care of the American Republic since 1776.

Hold meetings in every city and hamlet of the Republic, to offer up thanks to God for 138 years of freedom from British despotism and 138 years of genuine peace and friendship with France, Germany, Austria, Russia, Poland, Hungary, Bulgaria, Holland, Italy, Switzerland, Sweden, Norway, Denmark, Portugal, and Greece.

Denounce the vandalism that wantonly laid Washington in ashes in 1814; but rejoice over the naval victories of Perry and Macdonough, and the military victories of Gen. Stricker at Baltimore and Gen. Jackson at New Orleans.

Render thanks to God for giving America Washington—the superb leader of all the ages, and the patriots who sustained him and gave the world the Declaration of Independence.

And a special thanks to God for the high mental endowment bestowed on the American people, which in a period of great civil commotion, enabled them to remove the disturbing cause without leaving marks of degradation in any section of the Republic.

For this divine purpose, invite all true Americans and daughters of these fifteen friendly European nations, as well as the friends of liberty and concord in Canada and Australia, to commence immediate preparations for an honorable part in this great jubilee—for God and America.

Sincerely for both,

MICHAEL PIGGOTT.

(Our friend Mr. Piggott has had no small share in arousing the American people against the wiles of Anglo-maniacs. In season and out of season he has been active in propagating the unification of Americans as against those who would denationalize the Republic.)

C O N T E N T S

Chapter	Page
I. The Aryan Family.....	5
II. The Hindus.....	17
III. The Medo-Persians.....	23
IV. The Pelasgic Celts.....	35
V. The Romans.....	46
VI. The Celts, Teutons and Slavs.....	71
VII. The Huns, Avars and Turks.....	85
VIII. From Paganism to Christianity.....	103
IX. Adrian's Beloved Sons.....	139
X. Discovery and Settlement of America.....	163
XI. Creating the Republic.....	195
XII. No Foreordained Evils.....	225
XIII. American Progenitors.....	244
XIV. Inheritance	264
XV. Canadian Destiny.....	273
XVI. The American Language.....	281
XVII. Parting of the Ways.....	308
XVIII. An Address.....	340
XIX. The Emergonians.....	362
XX. The Cobden Club.....	381
XXI. The Lion Playing Lamb.....	408
XXII. The Anglo-American League.....	427

APPENDIX.

I.	The Emergonians' Constitution.....	463
II.	Open Letter to Gov. Dunne.....	472
III.	America's Grand Jubilee.....	478





LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 018 487 507 A